REESE LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA.
Received June, 1899
Accession No. 76362. Class No.

The Bancroft Library
University of California • Berkeley

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

http://www.archive.org/details/worksofgabrielha03harvrich

THE HUTH LIBRARY.

THE WORKS

OF

GABRIEL HARVEY, D.C.L.

VOL. III.

MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL.
THE TRIMMING OF THOMAS NASHE (1597).
STORY OF MERCY HARVEY.
GLOSSARIAL-INDEX WITH NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

REESE LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY
OF CALIFORNIA

What is this Life? the play of passion;—
Our mirth,—the Musick of Diuision;—
Our Mothers wombes the tyreing houses be,
Where we are drest for Liues short comedie;
The Earth y^e Stage,—Heauen the Spectator is,—
Who sitts and veiwes whosoere doth act amiss;
Our graves, which hyde vs from y^e scorching sunn,
Are like drawne curtaines when y^e play is done;
Thus acting play wee to our latest rest;
But then we die in earnest, not in jest.

RALEIGH (*Pickering MS.* fol. 113, collated with the *Ashmolean MSS.* 36 f. 35: 38 f. 154): HANNAH'S *Wotton, Raleigh, and others* (1857), pp. 81-2.

The Huth Library

OR

ELIZABETHAN-JACOBEAN

Unique or Very Rare

BOOKS

IN

VERSE AND PROSE

LARGELY

From the Library of

Henry Huth Esqr.

(Engraved by W. J. Alais from a Photograph.)

Edited with Introductions, Notes and Illustrations, etc

BY THE

Rev. Alexander B. Grosart, LL.D. F.S.A.

FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY

REESE LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY
OF CALIFORNIA

The Huth Library.

THE WORKS

OF

GABRIEL HARVEY, D.C.L.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

FOR THE FIRST TIME COLLECTED AND EDITED
WITH MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION, NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS, ETC.,

BY THE REV.

ALEXANDER B. GROSART, LL.D. (EDIN.), F.S.A. (SCOT.),
St. George's, Blackburn, Lancashire.

VOL. III.

MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL.
THE TRIMMING OF THOMAS NASHE (1597).
STORY OF MERCY HARVEY.
GLOSSARIAL-INDEX WITH NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

PRINTED FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY
1885.

50 *Copies.*]

7C 3.62.

Printed by Hazell, Watson, and Viney, Limited, London and Aylesbury.

PR2287
A2G7
1884
v.3
MAIN

CONTENTS.

PAGE

MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL . . . vii

TRIMMING OF THOMAS NASHE, GENTLEMAN . . 1

STORY OF MERCY HARVEY, SISTER OF DR. GABRIEL HARVEY, LOVE-SUIT WITH A NOBLEMAN . . 73

GLOSSARIAL-INDEX, INCLUDING NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS 99

There is no remedy for time misspent
No healing for the waste of idleness,
Whose very languor is a punishmen
Heavier than active souls can feel or guess.
O hours of indolence and discontent,
Not now to be redeemed! ye sting not less
Because I know this span of life was lent
For lofty duties, not for selfishness.
Not to be wiled away in aimless dreams,
But to improve ourselves, and serve mankind,
Life and its choicest faculties were given.
Man should be ever better than he seems:
And shape his acts, and discipline his mind,
To walk adorning earth, with hope of heaven.

SIR AUBREY DE VERE: *Song of Faith* (1842), p. 143.

REESE LIBRARY OF THE UNIVERSITY

MEMORIAL INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL.

BY THE EDITOR.

IT would be to fall in with that "busy idleness" pungently censured by HARVEY himself, elaborately to estimate his Life or Writings. Neither the Life nor the Writing goes beyond (as already put) the "Curiosities of Literature." Emphatically the 'Life' must be pronounced a meagre and inadequate one placed over-against its possibilities and opportunities and useless prolongation; whilst the more one reads his books the more provocative are they, if not of contempt, of righteous indignation. His bearing to the last toward the 'dead' Greene, the 'dead' Marlowe, the 'dead' Perne, the living Nashe and Countess of Pembroke, raises one's gorge even at this late day. I propose in this second half of my Memorial-Introduction simply to accentuate critically these several things, and to add certain miscellaneous observations and illustrations of some other points, under them.

1. *The 'dead Greene.'* Our references (*s.n.*) will guide the critical Reader to the main passages in these unhappy books about ROBERT GREENE; but throughout, and in most sudden and unexpected places—like the outdarting of a cobra, without its warning

hiss—there are others. Perhaps the worst of all his truculencies and evil-speaking occur in his final book, the "Trimming of Thomas Nashe"; which for malice and carefully wrought-on insult and slander stands alone in our literature. The aggravation and condemnation of the whole treatment lie in this—that by the assailant's own admission the solitary cause of offence was Greene's jestful allusion to Harvey's father having been a "Rope-maker." We search in vain for one jot or tittle beyond this; and it is due to the honour of our literature that occasion so slight and slender for opprobrium and ribaldry so outrageous, should be branded. The way in which he professes "not to bite the dead" or to "war with ghostes," while at the same time he renews that warfare, is simply infamous. His going to the 'landlady' of the deceased author and worming out of her every possible scrap of unclean and rancid gossip that he could, makes us think of a ghoul rather than of a man, much less a (professed) scholar. How infamous can only be realized as we read and re-read the hard sanctimoniousness of such a passage as the following on Greene's last letter, which ended, "if hee, and his wife had not succoured me, *I had died in the streets*." Thus—

"Oh what notable matter were here for a greene head, or Lucianicall conceit: that would take pleasure in the paine of such sorry distressed creatures? whose afflicted case, to euery charitable, or compassionate mind, cannot but seeme most commiserable, if not for their owne cause, yet for Gods sake: who deserueth infinitely of them, whome hee acquitteth, not according to judgement, but according to mercy. I rather hope of the deade, as I wish to the liuinge, that Grace might finally abounde, where wickednesse

did ouerflow: and that Christ in his diuine goodnesse shoulde miraculously forgiue the man, that in his diuelish badnesse blasphemously reuiled God. The dead bite not: and I am none of those, that bite the dead. When I begin to conflict with ghostes, then looke for my Confutation of his fine Quippe or quaint Dispute, whome his sweete hostisse, for a tender farewell, crowned with a Garland of Bayes: to shew, that a tenth Muse honoured him more being deade, then all the nine honoured him aliue. I know not whether *Skelton*, *Elderton*, or some like flourishing Poet were so enterred: it was his owne request, and his Nurses deuotion: and happily some of his fauourites may imitate the example. One that wished him a better lodging, then in a poore Iourneymans house, & a better graue, then in that Churchyard in Bedlam, hath perfourmed a little peece of greater duety to a Laureat Poet.

Here lies the man, whome mistrisse Isam *crown'd with bayes;*
Shee, shee, that ioyde to heare, her Nightingales sweete layes.

Which an other no sooner read, but he immediatly subscribed: as speaking to the ignorant passenger.

Heere Bedlam is: and heere a Poet garish,
Gaily bedeck'd, like forhorse of the parish.

"Other Epitaphes, and funerall deuotions I am promised by some, that deepely affect inspired Bardes, and the adopted sonnes of the Muses: but you may imagine, I haue smal superfluity of leysure, to entend such businesse: and yet nothing of frend, or foe, can be vnwelcome vnto mee, that sauoureth of Witte, or relisheth of Humanity, or tasteth of any good" (vol. i., pp. 172-3).

It must be remembered, further, that these "other epitaphes and funerall deuotions" he carefully procured and preserved and——published at the close of his "Foure Letters" (vol. i., p. 238 onward). What a commentary that on his "I am none of thos that bite the dead"! Nor less cruel his

balanced sentences immediately preceding (vol. i., pp. 168-9). Then, in the "lowest deep" a still lower, his reiteration, as from the mouths of others, of his foulest and worst charges, as thus—

"Alase, that anie shoulde say, as I haue heard diuers affirme: His witte was nothing but a minte of knauerie; himself a deuiser of iugling feates: a forger of couetous practises: an Inuentour of monstruous oathes: a derider of all religions: a contemner of God, and man: a desperate Lucianist: an abhominable Aretinist: an Arch-athiest: and he arch-deserued to be well hanged seauen yeares agoe. Twenty, and twentie such familiar speeches I ouer-passe: and bury the whole Legendary of his Life, & Death, in the Sepulchre of eternal Silence. I will not condemne, or censure his workes, which I neuer did so much as sûperficially ouerrunne, but as some fewe of them occursiuly presented themselues in Stationers shops, and some other houses of my acquaintaunce. But I pray God they haue not done more harme by corruption of manners, then good by quickening of witte: and I would, some Buyers had either more Reason to discerne, or lesse Appetite to desire such Nouels. The world is full inough of fooleries: though the humor be not feasted with such luxurious, and riotous Pamphlets" (vol. i., pp. 190-1).

With reference to his allegation of 'impurity' and his accusation of obscenity and vileness against Greene's books, these books themselves falsify them. In reversal of Herrick's famous pleading, whatever of stain and shame and ignominy may have belonged to his life, his books (even those of 'Coney-catching,' which certes offered ample opportunity for a prurient mind uttering itself) are free of them, in strange contrast with much that was contemporary. Then, how is Harvey forgivable that in the knowledge of the urgency and pathos of

the 'death-bed repentance' and the infinitely moving "written words" of his posthumous books, he kept silence, or momentarily broke it to scorn and put tongue in's cheek, on all the remorse and penitence, and remembered alone the sorrowful sinning. The supreme verdict-warning of Shakespeare (in the lips of sister pleading for brother) leaps to one's tongue in weighing and counter-weighing the two men:—

> "*Isabella* . . . . Believe this,
> No ceremony that to great ones 'longs,
> Not the king's crown, nor the deputed sword,
> The marshal's truncheon nor the judge's robe,
> Become them with one half so good a grace
> As mercy does.
> If he had been as you, and you as he,
> You would have slipp'd like him; but he, like you,
> Would not have been so stern. . . .
>
> . . . . . Alas, alas!
> Why, all the souls that were, were forfeit once;
> And He that might the vantage best have took,
> Found out the remedy. How would you be,
> If He, which is the top of judgment, should
> But judge you as you are? O think on that;
> And mercy then will breathe within your lips,
> Like man new-made" (*Measure for Measure* ii. 2).

No touch of ruth, no throb of self-knowledge, no recognition of circumstance, no arrest of mean passion, mitigated Harvey's 'memories' of the 'dead Poet' and contrite sinner. I risk iteration and reiteration that I may win reprobation of self-conceit so malignant and malignancy so self-conceited. I advisedly add this to my prior verdict in 'Memorial-Introduction—Biographical' (vol. i., pp. xlix). How absolutely self-ignorant Dr. Gabriel Harvey was, let

this witness:—"As for Envy or hatred to any party: I did euer abhorre them both: and I imagine there is not any, that either more resolutely disdayneth the one, or more peremptorily detesteth the other" (vol. i., p. 174). Kindred with this is his fatuous non-perception of the inequality of the combat as between Nashe and himself. His superior airs and serene 'contempt' take a look of *grotesquerie* (see vol. ii., p. 233), whilst his eager swallowing of the 'incense' of "worshipfull gentleman" (*ib.*, p. 234) excites our laughter. He had no notion how (really) Sir John Harington was taking him off in his well-known Epigram.

2. *The 'dead Marlowe.'* If it be to Harvey's irreversible condemnation that he had no tear for Greene's tears, no place for his penitence, equally in kind does it reveal the narrow *calibre* of the man that he had no perception of the superb genius of CHRISTOPHER MARLOWE. Our references (in Glossarial-Index, *s.n.*) on examination will be found to be mere spitting on him. He had no ear for his "mighty line," no imagination to be flushed with the splendour of his creations, no soul to grasp the magnificence of his portraitures, no human emotion over the tragedy of his early death. The last is the more absolutely discreditable (if the word be not too limp and tame) in that Harvey imagined the poet of "Dr. Faustus" to have died of the Plague (*not* in the appalling way he actually did). I had discerned this as contained in the close of the "Newe Letter," but as my friend Mr. A. H. Bullen has anticipated me in his notice of it, I willingly accept the account

from him in his just-published most admirable edition of Marlowe's Works. It thus runs—

"I must now direct the reader's attention to a strange 'Sonet' and stranger 'Postscript' and 'Glosse,' printed at the end of Gabriel Harvey's *Newe Letter of Notable Contents*, 1593. Dyce (following Collier) quoted the last line of the 'Sonet,' but none of Marlowe's editors has referred to the 'Postcript' and 'Glosse'; so I make no apology for giving the pieces in full.

Gorgon, or the Wonderfull yeare.

St. Fame *dispos'd to cunnycatch the world,*
Vprear'd a wonderment of Eighty Eight *:*
The Earth, *addreading to be ouerwhurld,*
What now auailes, quoth She, my ballance weight?
The Circle smyl'd to see the Center feare :
The wonder was, no wonder fell that yeare.

Wonders enhaunse their powre in numbers odd :
The fatall yeare of yeares is Ninety Three *:*
Parma *hath kist ;* De-maine *entreates the rodd :*
Warre wondreth, Peace and Spaine in Fraunce to see.
Braue Eckenberg, *the dowty Bassa shames :*
The Christian Neptune *Turkish* Vulcane *tames.*
Nauarre wooes Roome : Charlmaine *giues* Guise *the* Phy *:*
Weepe Powles, thy Tamberlaine *voutsafes to dye.*

L'enuoy.

The hugest miracle remaines behinde,
The second Shakerley Rash-swash to binde.

The Writer's Postscript : or a frendly *Caueat* to the *Second Shakerley* of Powles.

Slumbring I lay in melancholy bed,
Before the dawning of the sanguin light :
When Eccho *shrill, or some* Familiar Spright,
Buzzed an Epitaph *into my hed.*

Magnifique Mindes, bred of Gargantuas race,
In grisly weedes His Obsequies waiment,
Whose Corps on Powles, whose mind triūph'd on Kent,
Scorning to bate Sir Rodomont an ace.

I mus'd awhile: and hauing mus'd awhile,
Iesu, (quoth I) is that Gargantua *minde*
Conquerd, and left no Scanderbeg *behinde?*
Vowed he not to Powles A Second bile?
What bile or kibe? *(quoth that same early Spright)*
Haue you forgot the Scanderbegging wight?

Glosse. /

Is it a Dreame? or is it the Highest minde
That euer haunted Powles, or hunted winde,
Bereaft of that same sky-surmounting breath,
That breath, that taught the Tempany to swell?

He, and the Plague *contended for the game:*
The hawty man extolles his hideous thoughtes,
And gloriously insultes vpon poore soules,
That plague themselues: for faint harts plague themselues.
The tyrant Sicknesse of base-minded slaues,
Oh how it domineer's in Coward Lane?
So Surquidry rang-out his larum bell,
When he had girn'd at many a dolefull knell.

The graund Dissease disdain'd his toade Conceit,
And smiling at his tamberlaine contempt,
Sternely struck-home the peremptory stroke.
He that nor feared God, nor dreaded Diu'll,
Nor ought admired, but his wondrous selfe:
Like Iunos gawdy Bird, that prowdly stares
On glittering fan of his triumphant taile:
Or like the vgly Bugg that scorn'd to dy,
And mountes of Glory rear'd in towring witt:
Alas: but Babell Pride must kisse the pitt.

L'enuoy.

Powles steeple, *and a* hugyer thing *is downe:*
Beware the next Bull-beggar *of the towne.*
———Fata immatura vagantur.

"Harvey's *Newe Letter* is dated September 1593, and Marlowe died in the June preceding. The drift of the 'goggle-eyed sonet of Gorgon' (as Nashe terms it) and 'L'enuoy' plainly is,—'Marlowe is dead; it remains to muzzle Nashe.' The epitaph in the 'Postscript' certainly refers to Marlowe, and the meaning of the extraordinary lines 'I mus'd awhile,' etc., is the same as in the previous sonnet. But what are we to make of the 'Glosse'? The only sense to be got out of the lines is that Marlowe had fallen a victim to the plague. We know that the plague was raging at that time in the metropolis. Probably Gabriel Harvey was staying in the country, to be out of the reach of infection, when he wrote his *Newe Letter*. Hearing the report of Marlowe's death he had taken it for granted, when he raised his whoop of exultation, that the poet had died of the plague. We may be sure that, if he had been acquainted at the time with the true account of Marlowe's tragic end, he would have gloated over every detail with ghoul-like ferocity. Though Marlowe took no active part, so far as we know, in supporting Nashe, he seems not to have attempted to conceal his contempt for the Harveys. In *Haue with you to Saffron Walden*, Nashe reports a saying of Marlowe's about Gabriel's younger brother, the Rev. Richard Harvey:—'Kit Marloe was wont to say that he was an asse, good for nothing but to preach of the Iron Age.' If Marlowe was accustomed to deliver his opinion about the Harveys after this fashion, the Doctor's animosity is explicable. In *Pierce's Supererogation* the vindictive writer exclaims—'His

[*i.e.* Nashe's] gayest flourishes are but Gascoigne's weedes, or Tarleton's trickes, or Greene's crankes or *Marlowe's bravadoes.*' In the same tract he uses the term 'Marloweism' in the sense of 'irreverence'" (vol. i., pp. lxv-viii.)

Thus again Harvey's spite because of Marlowe's outspoken ridicule of a younger brother and perchance himself, made him stone-eyed to his prodigious genius.

His sneer "no Religion but precise Marlowisme" (ii. 234) is all he had to say of one of England's 'Mighties.' Personally I am disposed to set down for mythical a great deal of the alleged 'atheism' and profligacy of Christopher Marlowe; and I for one willingly doubt of the traditionary 'tragic end.' With one possessed of so strenuous a nostril for scenting out such carrion gossip, as Gabriel Harvey—ignorant of that 'tragic end,' one may well question if ever it were 'true.' But *the* point to be emphasized is that to Gabriel Harvey his 'mighty' contemporary Christopher Marlowe was—nobody. After that, it is not to be wondered at that Shakespeare is never in the slightest alluded to by him.*

3. *The 'dead Perne.'* Though somewhat noticeable in a small way, Dr. Andrew Perne (Dean of Ely) is too long forgotten to call for any full notice here or anywhere. He is now mainly of (passing) interest, as having in some unknown shape 'offended' EDMUND SPENSER—probably by insisting too pertinaciously in 'controlling' the course and order of the Poet's studies while at the University. But

* Contrast the always pathetic and kindly references to 'Kit Marlowe' by Nashe. See Glossarial-Index, *s.n.*

I deem it needful to recall Perne that further insight into Harvey's morbid malignity may be given, and, sooth-to-say, that the uttermost example of his intellectual force may be indicated. To actualize to ourselves the former, I must ask the word 'dead' to be again pondered. The word 'dead' gives new pathos to our emotion on Harvey's treatment of Greene and of Marlowe; in relation to Perne it reveals his cowardice.* His Letters to Spenser—wherein he assailed Perne—he never meant to be 'put into print,' and he was ready with crawling explanations and apologies (*not* in the etymological sense of 'defences') when called in question for these and other attacks on his University. But his "Pierce's Supererogation" was deliberately published by himself; and in it he has drawn up such a word-portrait of Dean Perne as concentrates within itself all possibilities and enormities of vengeful, despicable malignancy. Two dates are therefore to be noted—first, that Perne died on the 26th of April, 1586; second, that "Pierce's Supererogation" was not published until 1593. In the light (or gloom) of this

* See vol. ii., p. 302, where Harvey deliberately states that he had all along intended his "eternall memoriall." Then at p. 313 we have this diabolical sentence—"Yet suerly by his favour who could sharply iudge, and durst freely speake; he was a Fox and a halfe, in his whole body, and in euery part of his soule: albeit I will not deny, but he mought in some respectes be a Goose, and after a sort (as it were) an Asse: especially for defeating one without cause, and troubling the same without effect, that for ought he knew, *might possibly haue it in him, to requite him aliue, and dead.*" Tam o' Shanter's wife's nursing of her wrath to keep it warm was nothing to this.

chronology, let the reader turn to and return upon the aforesaid word-portrait. The canvas is relatively vast. It occupies twenty-three pages, over and above other incidental but not accidental allusions and dishonours, and bears traces of the nicest workmanship, the most wistful elaboration. This extraordinary word-portrait will be found in vol. ii., pp. 294—317. As a word-portrait, as a literary production, there is an uncanny power in it, a demoniac strength, a heartless penetrativeness, a volume and vehemence of vocabulary, and a plenitude of gleeful and insolent vengefulness, that in my judgment mark it out as unique in our literature. The man had brains who so wrote. Rubens' painting from the crucified criminal was not more awful. Nashe could not fail secretly to admire it (or at it). The ingenuity with which he works in traits, magnifying and minimizing, deepening and blackening, the dexterity with which he mingles possible fact and insinuation, the raillery that rolls out into devilish cachinnation (one would not call it 'laughter'), and imports out-of-the-way reading (rather than learning) to discredit Perne's learning, assure us that if Gabriel Harvey had had the accomplishment of verse he might have been an immortal satirist, beside whom Donne and Bastard, Hall and Pope had been subordinate. As I read and re-read the long passage indicated, containing this word-portrait, I am conscious that Harvey had an intellect that ought to have achieved great things. As it was, everything was transmuted into rancour and all uncharity.

4. *The 'living Noshe.'* I will not deny that in relation to Thomas Nashe this outrageous 'free lance' deserved all he got from either Harvey or others. Nor am I unaware of the cleverness of a good many of the irate Scholar's retorts on his antagonist, or of the drollness of many of his adoptions and adaptations of Nashe words and terms and turns and phrases. But two things are to be remembered. First — That Nashe offered an 'olive-branch' of reconciliation and oblivion. This I have already stated in 'Memorial-Introduction — Biographical' (vol. i., pp. xlix). I recall it now because his substantive relentlessness and inexorable wounded vanity are hereby made to stand out characterisingly. Second—That from first to last he has no idea of the surpassing intellectual force of Nashe; of the child's play that it was to him to beat a score of Harveys; of the epoch-marking advent of a new writer of English prose. As with Greene and Marlowe, Nashe was nothing to Gabriel Harvey, D.C.L., but an impudent varlet with a blackguard tongue. His "Trimming of Thomas Nashe" is sheer vulgarity and oyster-wife abuse. It is a rewarding study to see with what ability and gusto Nashe takes up Harvey's challenges and caps his best and worst stories of him.

Coming a little closer to Harvey's controversies or 'flytings' with Nashe, it occurs to me as worth while to record here the bulk (at least) of his quotations from "Pierce Pennilesse" in the "Foure Letters," and to note a few minor things therein.

p. 195. "For . . . Purse," P. P., Shaks. Soc. ed., p. 13.
p. 196. "Why ist . . . disease?" verse, P. P. 3.
p. 196. "Divines . . . dwell," verse, P. P. 5.
p. 196. "England . . . worth," verse, P. P. 6.
p. 196. "Hei . . . mouent," verse, P. P. 6.
"Forgive . . . Mirth," verse, P. P. 6—altered from first person to third.
p. 197. From "Mecænas," l. 3, to "worke," l. 7, is greatly made up from phrases, P. P. 42.
p. 200 *ad fin.* "Talketh of a Bachelar's . . . Aristotle," P. P. 43.
p. 201. "Casting . . . celestial bodies," all prose, P. P. 42.
p. 201. "Elderton's . . . ballats," P. P. 44.
"Beard of Th. N. . . . sternely upon him," P. P. 42.
"Monstrous, monstrous," pp. 45. [Said by Nashe of Harvey's "Lambe of God."]
p. 202. "But as . . . wast paper," a reference to P. P. 46.
p. 204. "Termes [*ad fin.*] . . . eares," P. P. 43.
p. 205. "Supplication . . . Darkeness" [a second reference], P. P. 13.
p. 206. "Contend with cold . . . Humfrey," P. P. 1, 9, 11.
"Lick dishes," P. P. 47.
p. 206. "To ban . . . wretch," verse, P. P. 6.
p. 206. "Devils distressed orator"—"your [the devil's] single souled orator," P. P. 13.
p. 207. "Forgive . . . birth," verse, altered from first to third person, P. P. 6.
p. 207. "O friends . . . downe," verse, P. P. 6.
"Pol . . . Amici," P. P. 6.
p. 209. "Ah . . . so," verse, P. P. 6.
p. 198. "Fortuna favet fatu," quoted in margin, P. P. 6.
p. 209. "Meritis . . . causam," in margin of P. P. 7.
p. 214. "Aquafortis," a second reference to P. P. 43.
p. 216. "Eares . . . gunpowder," third reference to P. P. 43.
p. 217. "Sanabill . . . trice," P. P. 46.
p. 194. "To . . . Darknesse," P. P. 13.
p. 195. "*Fauste*," etc. He does not mean that Nash quoted this, but that the Latin quotations or sentences that cover the margins of his opening pages are as trite as this phrase.
p. 195. "That the worlde . . . miserable," P. P. 6.

Glancing back on these, be it noted that Nashe (P. P., p. 43, margin) speaks of "Marti authoris Io Pæan," and in his text manifestly gives the authorship to Gabriel Harvey. He also says that one of his brothers fathered a book written by Gabriel Harvey (p. 44). It is also noteworthy that Harvey never directly denies the truth of Nashe's accusation (pp. 200-1). Judging from his character, one must believe that he would have denied the Bachelor's hood story if he could, just as he would have denied, had it been possible, the absurd predictions so mercilessly laughed at. It seems also all but certain that Gabriel Harvey had to do with the "Mar-Prelate" tractates (of which more in Nashe *in loco*).

Further—without giving an exhaustive list, the following words occur first in Nashe, and are quoted from him by Harvey :—

Absonisme, Nashe	ii. 263	Gibraltar, Nashe	ii. 240
Balductums,	„ 263	(but in Harvey, ii. 246, Gibaltar).	
Calimunco,	„ 283		
Catilinaries,	„ 191	Gilgilis Hoberdehoy,	„ 238
Carminicall,	„ 180	Inckhornisme,	„ 265
Dromidate,	„ 218	Pistlepragmos,	„ 231
Gabriel Howleglass,	„ 237	Turlery ginkes,	„ 293
Gamaliel Hobgoblin,	„ 224	Why thou errant, &c.	„ 238-9
Gimpanado,	„ 184		
Gregory Haberdine,	„ 241	(Harvey ii. 230).	

Nashe's Harvey-like readiness in producing personal gossip against his adversary perhaps hit keenest of all in his inuendoes on Mercy Harvey. As it was deemed expedient to reproduce her Story from Harvey's "Letter-Book" (in the present volume), these

Notes may find a place at this point. The opening of the Story gives a summary of what is told afterwards in detail. It seems proper to call attention to this, as Mr. Scott has not done so. There are certain chronological contradictions: *e.g.*, pp. 76 and 79, Weddensday—p. 76 says "next Weddensday" to "three or four daies after" (which after Tuesday must have been Friday or Saturday), but p. 79 says, "almost a sennight after"—a clear discrepancy in the tale. There is also a want in "followith" (p. 86). Then there is another discrepancy pp. 87 and 89. In p. 87 she appoints the next day to Christmas (*i.e.* Sunday, the day after Christmas); she came, and went away; and, p. 89, agrees to meet him on Sunday, the next day to Christmas! Then she on the Thursday (p. 90; also p. 93, ll. 7-9) before New Year's Day, excuses herself that she had gone to her friends. All this is put right if we suppose Christmas on p. 89 to be a slip for New Year's Day. There is a second want at p. 84, "on this manner," the letter not being given. A third is on page 93, "as followith," but nothing follows. Is the explanation this—that after copying out the young lord's first letter (p. 82) Harvey probably thought it shorter and simpler to insert the originals in the places? Finally here—Mr. Scott (as before) at page 76 prints "thirde" "seconde letter." The difficulty lies in the word 'thirde,' not in 'seconde'; and as it is in " " it may be a misreading and misprint for or variant of 'thirle,' which is now in Devonshire = meagre, thin or lean. Not improbably the noble lord, trusting to his gifts

more than to his words, did not trouble himself with more than a brief note. That it was the Lords 'seconde' letter appears by page 84, ¶ 4.

Mercy Harvey is supposed to be vindicated by her Brother's narrative; but it lies on the surface that she was rather afraid than unwilling. She hesitates and tampers, says no when she meant yes, and in her heart of hearts was fallen. The Story is as a shaft of light opened on the manners and conduct of a (so-called) married 'nobleman,' and suggests a good deal.

5. *The Countess of Pembroke.* Our Glossarial-Index references under 'Gentlewoman' and under 'Pembroke' will satisfy the critical reader that the two were one—that is, that Harvey wished to convey that idea. Notwithstanding his fulsome, nauseous flatteries (*e.g.*, vol. i., 276-84, etc., etc.), no such 'Vindication' of him by "Sidney's sister, Pembroke's mother," ever appeared. I doubt exceedingly if the "fair lady" was not fooling the Pedant to the top of his bent, or possibly his 'wish' was 'father to the thought.' The student-reader will compare the double set of references (as above). Specifically the identification is verified by the odd use of the word 'tinsel' in vol. i., pp. 279-80, and ii. 321. It is conceivable that in her offence with Nashe for his part in the alleged surreptitious publication of the 'Arcadia' the Countess of Pembroke might feel disposed to 'punish' him. If so, her second-thoughts were wiser, seeing that she was no match for the terrible tongue and pen of Thomas Nashe. *En passant*, Harvey's "Onely One excepted"

(ii. 266) pointed to Elizabeth, who even in her proud old age would allow herself to be placed second to none. The *potentiality*, the momentum of the 'great Queen' comes out in a thousand ways in contemporary literature; but in hardly anything more strikingly than in the semi-scared note when laudation of any sort of any other seems to touch her supremacy. So abject a nature as Harvey's is no great instance, but there are greatest instances—as witness Spenser, Shakespeare, "rare Ben."

I know not that it is warrantable to occupy more space or words in criticism of Dr. Gabriel Harvey. His relations to Sidney and Spenser give one inevitable relentings in our as inevitable low thoughts of him; and when we turn over his most cantankerous and quibbling pages we come upon "wise saws and modern instances" and salt of wit, that, while they do not countervail our low thoughts of the man, compel us to acknowledge that, if a fool, he was a '*learned* fool,' and if his positive achievement through a long life (in literature) weighed against a handful of earth which has raised a wild-flower or blade of grass, is outweighed by it, we nevertheless have a hankering sense of (abortive) capacity and misdirected force. Thus doubly regarded, I hope most of my readers will deem it is no mere supererogation to have 'painfully' collected Gabriel Harvey's 'Works.' It had been easy to have increased these from MSS. and Marginalia in public and private libraries, but I take it, the *raison d'être* for any collection of such writings lies mainly in the necessity of the student of our

literature possessing Harvey's tractates in order to understand those of Greene, Nashe, and other contemporaries; whilst his vituperative vocabulary is of singular interest in the history of our language, albeit his alleged scholarship is not invariably confirmed by some of his odd coinages. I therefore content myself with printing—in conclusion—for *the first time*, a letter of Harvey's which (with many treasures) I personally transcribed when, by permission of the Marquis of Salisbury, I spent "sunny days" among the Manuscripts of Hatfield.

The Letter thus runs:—

DR. GABRIEL HARVEY TO SIR R. CECIL.

SIR,—May it please you amongst so many honorable welcoms at your returne after your honorable Embassage in France, performed like your other actions with encrease of your worthy reputation: to accept the duty of an affectionate mind, and to voutsafe the reading of a fewe, officious lines, written rather with my hart, then with my hand. I presume your Honour cannot be ignorant, how special and extraordinarie favour it pleased aswell my Lord your most worthy father, as my Lady your excellent moother to voutsafe me many yeares since: and I must neuer forget the report of sum honest frends, how much I was beholding unto yourself, for sum good words, most fauorably uttered of me, whiles you were in the Lowe Countrie: at the time of that noble Embassage, and weightie Treatie with the Prince of Parma. In which respects, together with an infallible assurance of your sound judgment and vertuous disposition, effectually approved to the world: I am the bolder at this instant to undertake a humble petition to your Honour, in a suite wherein I most earnestly and importunely sollicited your right honorable parents sum twelve yeares since: as percase yourself may remember. Not without pregnant hope of speeding, either by the ordinarie course of election, or by their extraordinarie favour, had not her Majesties

mandate, overruled the case. Doctor Preston, the Master of that hall, is either now dead or at the point of death, past hope of recouerie: as I am credibly certified. I shoold think miself at the last sumway happy, and woold render miself as thankfull as any man of my possibilitie, if by the only meanes of my good Lord Treasurer, and your good Honour, I might procure the gratious fauour that preferred Mr. Preston, to that Mastership: first by the Letter of your predecessor Mr. Secretary Walsingham, for the stay of the election, till her Maiesties pleasure were better knowne; and then by Her Highnes mandate for the election of Mr. Preston. Which course made him master of that Colledg, where otherwise he cowld noway have requested, or purchased one voice: and I then might have gotten it by pluralitie of voices; whereof I supposed miself sure. Now having sum yeares discontinued my place there, and but two of the cumpanie leaft, that were fellowes then, and I using no plausible, or pleasing meanes after the fashion of the world; I know not certainly, how farr I might preuaile with them: and have the more cause to dowbt in respect of sum new Doctore, soiorning there since. Howbeit much mie punies in senioritie and such as neuer were fellowes of the Colledg, whereas I was fellow there sum fiftene yeares, after I had bene eight yeares fellow in Pembrook Hall. All this time the best I can say for miself, is, that I have continually dun my endeuour to loose no time: but in a manner without all interruption haue spent so great part of mine age, either in reading the best Autors extant, aswell in Lawe, as in other emploiable faculties; or in writing sum Discourses, either of private use, or of publique importance. For in all mie studdies, and exercises, especiallie since I was Doctor, I had euer an earnest and curious care of sownd knowledg, and esteemed no reading, or writing without matter of effectual use in esse: as I hope shoold soone appeare, if I were setled in a place of competent maintenance, or had but a foundation to build upon according to incident occasions. Sum men woold haue used more plausible meanes of Insinuation to my good Lord Treasurer, that haue not written halfe so much in honour of his weightie and rare vertues, and in memorie of his tru-honor-

able name: as at any occasion, I am reddy to impart to your Honour, whensoever your leisure will permit the perusall of such exercises. But I protest, I sowght not mine owne commoditie, or preferment, but his honour and fame; as I also did in sundrie royall Cantos, (nigh as much in quantitie, as Ariosto) in celebration of her Maiesties most prosperous, and in truth glorious gouernement; sum of them deuised many yeares past at the particular instances of the excellent knight, and mie inestimable deare frend, Sir Philip Sidney; sum since the renowned victorie in the famous yeare, 88. Which neuertheless I intended not to publish in y^e^ lifetime of Her Maiestie, had not sum late provoking occasions enforced an alteration of my purpose: but in case of mortalitie, or a thousand casualties in forrin trauail, I meant, to committ them to the fidelitie of sum faithfull and iudicious frend. Now if my good L. Treasurer or your good H. shall in your sharp and sound iudgment, not disallow of them; it importeth me in sum considerations, to bestow a little time in the transcripting and reforming of them; and to publish them, togither with manie other Traicts and Discourses, sum in Latin, sum in Inglish, sum in verse according to the occasion, but much more in prose; sum in Humanitie, Historie, Pollicy, Lawe, and the sowle of the whole boddie of Law, Reason, sum in the Mathematiques, in Cosmographie, in the Art of Nauigation, in the Art of warr, in the tru Chymique without imposture (which I learned of your most learned predecessour, Sir Thomas Smith, not to contemne) and other effectual practicable knowlage, in part hetherto unreuealed, in part unskilfully handeled for the matter, or obscurely for the forme: with more speculatiue conceit, then industrious practis, or method, the two discouering eich (*sic*) of this age. I speak it not anyway to boste, (that loath the follie of any such vanity) but to certifie y^e^ truth. For I can in one year publish more, then anie Inglishman hath hetherto dun: I hope with the allowance of the sharpest and deepest Judgments in Ingland: whose censure I am not only willing, but desirous to underlie, as one that woold be lothe to divulge anything without hope of life, and continuance in it. But thereof more at fitter opportunitie. Now concerning my present

petition, if I might with effect beseech your Honour to cause a stay of that election, till fuller advertisement of Her Maiestie's pleasure, and then to procure Her Highnes mandate in my behalfe: surely I shoold hold miself the most bownden unto your H. of any schollar in Ingland, euen euerlastingly, and will alwaies be fownd as sincerely gratefull and dutifull to my good L. Treasurer, and yourself, as anie man possibly may in my case. And in the meantime most humbly and affectionately remaine at your seruice; if it may like your Honour, to desire y^e^ fauor to commande the same in any sort. I beseech God to continu the accomplishment of his rare and singular blessings upon you: and so crauing pardon for this tediousness, I affectionatly recommend you to the continual encrease of his excellent and diuine graces. From Walden: this 8. of May.

"Your Honours right-dutiful at commandment,

"Gabriel haruey.

Add. "To the Right honorable Sir Robert Cecill, principal Secretary to Her most excellent Maiestie: and late Lorde Embassadour in France, newly returned thence."

End. "1598. 8° Maii. Dr. Harvey to my Mr. The Mr. of Trinitie Hall dangerouslie sycke. Desires the eleccõn may be stayd for him."

I conclude these additions to our 'Memorial-Introduction—Biographical' (vol. i.) with two *items* worthy of preservation—viz., a curious published allusion to the Nashe-Harvey quarrel, and a contemporary and hitherto unpublished MS. on the "Trimming of Thomas Nashe." These follow.

(*a*) From "Letter of England to her Three Daughters" in "Polimanteia, or the meanes lawfull and unlawfull to iudge of the Fall of a Commonwealth, 1595" (reproduced in our *Occasional Issues*). This has already been given in our Nashe (vol. i., pp. xvii-xviii), but is needed here as well, thus:—

" *Cambridge*, make thy two childrē friēds : thou hast been vnkinde vnto the one [Nashe] to weane him before his time ; and too fonde vpon the other to keepe him so long without preferment : the one is ancient, and of much reading [Harvey], the other is young but full of wit ; tell thē both thou bred thē, and brought thē vp : bid the ancient forbeare to offer wrong ; tell the younger he shall suffer none : bid him that is free by law, think it a shame to be entangled in small matters : but tell the other, he must leaue to meditate reuenge for his aduersarie (and let that suffice for al reuenge) (to learnings iniurie) liues vnregarded."

(*b*) From "Sloane MSS., Plut. xcvi. E." :—

THE TRIMING OF TOM NASHE.

Harke, harke my Masters, and give eare, give eare, etc.

Harke, hark my maysters and be still, be still and giue good eare
And I will singe as merrye a jeast as you have hearde this yeare ;
For mirth methinkes this merrye ryme shold not come out of season,
If any then fynde any faulte, he lackes both wit and reason ;
Yet sing I not of lo[rd] nor kn[ight] nor Sq[uire] of low degree,
But of a merrye Greeke who dwelt far hence 'ith North Countrye ;
Far hence 'ith North Countrye he dwelt ; his name I have forgot,
But since he was foole neere a kin to Monsier Don Quixot,
And like him too as like might bee, in bodye, mynde and face,
And for his doughtye deedes in fight, not bating him an ace ;
And he as many authors read as ere Don Quixot had,
And some of them colde say by harte, to make the hearers glad.
The valyand deeds o'th kn[ight] of th' Sun and Rosicleer soe tall,
And Palmarinde of Engl[and] too. and Amadis of Gaul ;

Bevis of Hampton he had read, and Guy of Warwick stoute,
Nuon of Burdeux, though so long, yet he had read him out:
The hundred tales, and scoggings jeasts, and Arthur of'th round Table,
The twelve wyse men of Gotam too, and Ballats innumerable:
But to proceed, and not to make the matter long or garrishe,
He was the onlye onely youth that was in al our parishe;
This gallant foole livde twenty yeares under his Mother's wing,
And for to see some countryes strange, he thought to have a flinge.
He sadled then his good gray mare, his mare as gray as glasse,
The w^ch^ cold carrye sackes to'th mil, far better then an ASSE;
He tooke his leave of all his frends but cheiflye of his mother,
Who sware of all the Barnes she had, she had not sike an other.
Hee mounted then upon his mare, and shorte tale for to tell,
His father's Bootes, and one old spur, did serve him passing well;
His mother's Girdle for a scarfe, did make him fine and gay;
W^th^ rustye morglay by his syde foole brave he went away.
He had not ridden halfe a myle, good lucke may him betyde,
But he askte the way to Lond[on] towne, for thether wold he ryde;
Yet was it neuer his good luck, his good luck to come there;
Disastrous fortune kept him backe, as you shall after heare.
But when he had ridden twenty myles, twenty at the most;
He at an old house did dismount, and then began to boaste;
If England bee as big each way as I have come, he sayde,
Then of the Spanyard, Turke, nor Pope, we need not be afrayde;
But then to his Ostis spake he, let me haue for my Money
A daintye dish, w^ch^ likes me well, men call Codlinge and honey.

In truth S^{r}, (qth she) I have neither Cake, pye, nor Custarde,
But I have a dishe, a daintye dish, men call stewd pr[unes] and musterd.
But when his pennye he had spent, and was about to paye,
Shee spyde by chance, by chance she spyde some riding on the way;
To whom wth cap in hand he said, praye whether are you bound?
We ryde fayre S^{r}, (qth one of them) to Ebors ancient towne;
And thether wold I ryde (qth he) if you ryde not to faste.
But to be breife, at Ebors towne they alighted at the last;
Hee to an Oastler gave his mare, and bad him take some paynes
To set hir up, to give hir hay and halfe a pecke of Graynes,
The whilst he went about the towne, some mervailes for to spye:
But first of all he wondred that the houses were soe hye;
But then he saw the strangest sight y^{t} ere he saw before,
A Monky mowing at his clog, tyde at my lo[rd] Major's doore:
Hee blest himselfe, and then did aske, what Country man he was?
A Monkye S^{r}! A Monke (qth he) why then he can sing Masse!
Nay S^{r}, hee's neyther French, nor Du[tch] nor Scot, nor Papiste.
Not eyther? I am sure, I'm sure he is some slye outlandish Atheist.
But when he had gapèd at each shop, and gazèd at each signe,
Hee at the Taverne needes wold drinke, his pennye pot of wyne.
When he had drunke the wyne so redd, he was so animated,
That he wold to the Barbers goe to be matriculated;
But when unto the shop he came, the Barbar neat and trim,
Did bid him welcome hartyle, and th[us] he spake to him.
Of what newe Cut wil you be Cut, the French Cut or y^{e} Dutch?
For of newe Cuts I have such store, fewe in this towne have such:

Wil you be Cut the swallow tayle, the Spade or Piccadevante?
For all thes Cuts to pleasure you upon my fingers haunte.
Of other Cuts I have in store if you mislike of thos,
The lovelye Cut unto yo^{r} frends, or Cruel to yo^{r} foes ;
So much of Cuts the Barber talkt, my youth did like him worse,
For why he fearde one of thos Cuts was, he wold Cut his purse.
I pray you Clippe my hayre (qth he) none of yo^{r} Cuts I crave.
It shal be done the Barber said, yo^{r} bearde Ile also shave.
He knew not what that shaveing meant yet durst he nothing say,
But prayde him for to make some haste, for he had haste away.
Hee set him downe then in a chayre upon a cushen warme ;
Hee put a cloath about his necke ; al this was yet no harme.
Hee polde his heade, and washte his face, wth Bals that sweet did smel,
He rubde and scrubd, he snipt and snapt; al this did like him well.
W^{ch} being done, the Barber then proceeds to shave his face,
And wth a razor sharpe and keene, began to scrape apace.
Hee being fearde, the Barber said, Ile warrant ye for a pin ;
But as he talkt he whitled stil just underneath his chin,
W^{ch} terrifyed him so to'th harte that (this I pray you note),
Before he fearèd but his Purse, but now he feard his Throate.
Plucke up yo^{r} harte, the Barber said, let nothing heere afright yee ;
And wyfe bring hether quicklye, quick, a little *aqua vitæ*.
And you S^{r} Boy, come hither now and on your Citron playe,
Some merrye hunts up or Scotch jig, to drive his feare away :
But yet before the water came my youth was in a swounde,
Nor Magicke then cold banish feares, for he sanke to the ground.
The Barber swore, the wyfe cryde out, the neighbo^{rs} in came runing,

And euerye one to save the man did shew their skil and
cuning:
Some helde burnte feathers to his nose, caste wat[er] in his
face,
Pourde *aqua vitæ* in his mouth, and some did pray apace.
But yet when all was done, and too their hope was almost
past,
Until by giving him some ayre his lyfe returnde at last.
But oh the shop was soe perfumde, each one did stop his
nose;
For he for feare, for feare, alas, alas had shit his hose,
Some laught, some smilde, and some cryde fye, but all
made hast away,
And he wth shame and greefe poore man did for his triming
pay;
And went from thence unto the place from whence he came
before,
And vowde to God, to God he vowde, neuer to trauel more.
So home unto his mother came and there you need not
doubt
But of all his trauels made a rime but of his Cutting out.
Thus have I done the best to please, the best that I was able,
W^{eh} if it please, then bid me Drinke, and so be at your
Table. Finis.

This burlesque on satire, or satirical burlesque, was evidently meant to represent 'Tom Nashe' ludicrously, albeit save the title the anonymous writer of it leaves Harvey unnoticed. Whether he was for him or no, Thomas Dekker's verdict remains:—

"And thou, into whose soule (if euer there were a *Pithagorean Metempsuchosis*) the raptures of that fierie and inconfinable *Italian* spirit were bounteously and boundlesly infused, thou sometimes Secretary to *Pierce Pennylesse*, and Master of his requests, ingenious, ingenuous, fluent, facetious, T. *Nash*: from whose aboundant pen, hony flow'd to thy friends, and mortall Aconite to thy enemies:

thou that madest the Doctor a flat Dunce, and beat'st him at two tall sundry Weapons, Poetrie, and Oratorie: Sharpest Satyre, Luculent Poet, Elegant Orator, get leaue for thy Ghost to come from her abiding, and to dwell with me a while, till she hath carows'd to me in her owne wōted ful measures of wit, that my plump braynes may swell, and burst into bitter Inuectiues against the Lieftenant of Limbo, if hee casheere *Pierce Pennylesse* with dead pay" (vol. ii., p. 103).

On the first folio (reversed) of the MS. whence the preceding poem is fetched, is this note: "Leave y^{s} at Mr. Kirkes at y^{e} signe of y^{e} wild man upon y^{e} market place; in Breda for Mr. Roger Carter: frō his sister, Ja. Hearne." The MS. would thus appear to have been formerly in the possession of the antiquary Hearne; but he gives no indication of the Scribe. It is a curious miscellany of Verse and Prose.

I may not close this second half of my Memorial-Introduction and the last volume of Harvey's 'Works,' without heart-felt acknowledgment of able, willing and continuous help rendered by Dr. Brinsley Nicholson, of London. As in nearly all my undertakings, this well-informed and accurate fellow-worker, has in the most spontaneous and self-denying way hastened to render me all possible aid.

ALEXANDER B. GROSART.

VII.

TRIMMING OF THOMAS NASHE, GENTLEMAN....

1597.

NOTE.

For the 'Trimming of Thomas Nafhe' I am again indebted to the Huth Library—a second exemplar is in the British Museum. Our reproduction of Nashe's caricature-portrait is faithful to the original, and must not be judged of by Mr. J. P. Collier's very poor one, any more than our texts of either Harvey or Nashe, by his.—G.

THE
TRIMMING

of Thomas Naſhe, Gentleman,

by the high-tituled patron *Don Richardo de Medico campo,* Barber Chirurgion to Trinitie Colledge in Cambridge.

Faber quas fecit compedes ipſe geſtat.

LONDON,
Printed for Philip Scarlet.
1597.

To the Learned.

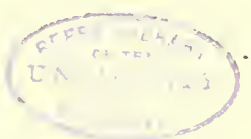
Eme, perlege, nec te precii pœnitebit.

To the ſimple.

Buy mee, read me through, and thou wilt not repente thee of thy coſt.

To the Gentle Reader.

PRoface gentle Gētlemen, I am ſorry I haue no better Cates to preſēt you with: but pardon I pray you, for this which I haue heere prouided, was bred in Lent, and Lent (you know) is ſaid of *leane*, becauſe it macerates & makes leane the bodye: if therefore this diſh bee leane and nothing anſwearable to your expectation, let it ſuffice twas bred in Lent: neither had it anye time wherein it might gather anye thinge vnto it ſelfe to make it more fat and delightfull. His Epiſtle I expected any time theſe three yeares, but this mine aunſwer *ſine fuco loquar*, (though it be not / worthy to bee called the worke of one well ſpent houre) I haue wrought foorth out of the ſtolne houres of three weekes: for although occaſion hath been offered euer ſince the Epiſtle hath been extant, to anſwere it: yet held in ſuſpence conſidering the man and matter, whether I ſhould take it vpon mee or no: at laſt concluding him eaſily anſwerable, I haue vndergone it: therefore howſoeuer you ſee it crept abroad



Gentles, receiue it well in worth: Your fauours happily might adde ſtrength vnto it, and ſtirre vp the faint creeping ſteps to a more liuely pace: it by hard hap being denied of the progreſſe, keeping at home hath growne ſomewhat greater. To tell you what the man is, and the reaſon of this book, were but triuiall and ſuperfluous, only this, you may call it *The trimming of Thomas Naſhe*, wherein hee is deſcribed. In trimming of which deſcription, though I haue founde out and fetcht from the mint ſome few new wordes to coulor him, / grant me pardon, I thinke them fitte for him who is ſo limmed and coullored with all new found villanie: for if they bee etimologiſde, they no whit diſagree from his properties. Slender labour hath ſuffiſed to weaue this thinne ſuperficiall vaile to couer his crimſon Epiſtle, and ſhaddow it foorth vnto the world. For as a garment of too bright a color is too euil an obiect for the eyes (as is the Sun), & is nothing gazed after, no not of thoſe who neuer ſaw it before: yet newe things are deſired, becauſe twould proue pernicious to their eyes, but once oreclowded and couered with a lawne veſture, through that it ſhines & becommeth a leſſe hurting obiect, and draws the peoples ſight after it: ſo his Epiſtle in it[s] owne colour beeing too reſplendent and hurtfull to the readers, is laid apart & is nothing in requeſt, for that twould proue as a burn-

ing glaſſe vnto their eyes, but veſtured with this Caule & rare-wrought garmēt, it loſeth part of it[s] hurting vigour, & therefore is cald to be ſeene againe.

Loathed / tediouſnes I alſo eſchewed as no leſſe hurtfull than too bright an obiect: the Booke which he dedicateth to me, is ſo tedious, that had I read it through, it ſo loathſome would haue wrought more on mee both vpward & downward, then 3. drams of pilles: his Epiſtle is not behinde hand: to that I might ſay as ſaid *Diogenes* to the men of *Minda*, (whoſe gates were greater in analogicall proportion then their Citie:) O yee men of *Minda*, looke to your Cittie, that it flyes not out at your gates. So his booke might well for the largeneſſe of the Epiſtle haue flowne out at it, and ſurely I thinke had his book any wings, that is, any queint deuiſe flying abroad to pleaſe withall, it would neuer haue ſtaid till this time: therfore I thinke it prouidently done of him (though out of doubt the foole had no ſuch drift) to make the gates ſo bigge, that when we haue paſſed through the gates, ſuppoſing all the Cittie to be ſutable to the ſtatelines of them: but after we are entred, finding / our ſelues meerely guld, and that all the Cittie is not worth the gates, wee may the more readily finde the way out of the Cittie againe, the gates beeing ſo great: and this

remedye I founde once when I tooke my iourney into his Cittie. But to returne, If this bee not ſo well ſet foorth as you could wiſh it were, blame mee not: for as the Moon being naked & bare, is ſaid once to haue gone to her mother, and aſked of her a coat to cloath her: but ſhe anſwered, there could bee no coate made fit for her, for her inſtabilitie, ſometime ſhe being in the ful, and ſomtime in the wane: ſo hee being a man of ſo great reuolution, I could not fit him, for if I had vndertaken to ſpeak of one of his properties, another came into my mind, & another followed that, which bred confuſion, making it too little for him: therefore were it not too little, it might be twold be fit, but howſoeuer, pardon (Gentlemen) my boldnes in preſenting to your fauorable viewes this litle & cōfuſed coate.

Yours in all curteſie, *Richard Lichfield.*/

The trimming of Thomas Naſhe.

SIR, heere is a gentleman at the doore would ſpeake with you. Let him come in. *M. Naſhe!* welcome. What, you would be trimd? & I cannot denie you that fauour. Come, ſit downe, Ile trim you my ſelfe. How now? what makes you ſit downe ſo tenderly? you crintch in your buttocks like old father *Pater patriæ*, he that was father to a whole countrey of baſtards. Diſpatch, ſt, boy, ſet the water to the fire: but ſirra, hearke in your eare, firſt goe prouide me my breakfaſt, that I goe not faſting about him; then goe to the Apothecarie, and fetch mee ſome repreſiue *Antidotum* to put into the baſon, to keep downe the venemous vapors that ariſe from his infectious excremēts: for (I tell you) I like not his countenance, I am afraid he labours of the venereall murre.

Muſe not (gentle *Thomas*) that I come ſo roughly vppon you with Sit downe, without anie Dedicatorie Epiſtle, which (I know) you expected ; for that your Epiſtle (in ſome wiſe) brought forth this ſmall Worke : which purpoſely I omitted, ſcorning Patronage againſt you. For if (by an Epiſtle) I had made ſome Lord or Knight my Patron, it would haue mennaged and giuen courage to you, thus (not ſufficient of my ſelfe) I ſhould get ſome Protector to ſtand out with you. As in a Cocke fight, if the Cocke-maſter takes off his Cocke when they are buckled together, it encourageth the other Cocke (deeming / his aduerſarie to flye to his Maſter for refuge) : ſo that hee crowes foorth the triumph before the victorie. Therefore forfooth, if for orders ſake (that of cuſtome might be made a neceſſarie law) you would haue an Epiſtle, I thought it beſt, reſpecting the ſubiect matter, as neere as poſſibly I could to patterne it with the like Patron. Then not knowing where to heare of ſome miſcreant, polluted with all vices both of bodie & minde : and viewing ouer all the impreſt images of men in the memoriall cell of my braine, at laſt I eſpied your ſelfe more liuely ingrauen than the reſt, and as it were offring your ſelfe to this purpoſe. Then preſently I made choice of you, that like an aſſe you might beare your burden, & patronize your owne ſcourge,

O eloquence.

as dooth the ſilly hedge-ſparrow, that ſo long foſtereth vp the cuckow in her neaſt, till at length ſhe bee deuoured of her: or the Viper, that is deſtroyed of her owne whelpes. All *England* for a Patron. But to this ſodaine ioy, (for ſodaine ioy ſoone ends) this croſſe happened; That knowing it to bee my duetie to gratulate my Patrone with the firſt hereof, but not knowing where to finde you, for that you (the Worlds Citizen) are heere and there, you may dine in this place, & goe ſupperleſſe to bed, if you know where to haue your bed: you maye bee in one priſon to-day and in another to-morrow: ſo that you haue a place but as a fleeting incorporeall ſubſtaunce, circumſcribed with no limits, that of your owne you haue not ſo much as one of *Diogenes* his poore cottages. You haue indeed a *terminus a quo* (as we Logicians ſpeake) but no *terminus ad quem*. Now ſir, for the vncertaintie of your manſion houſe, you hauing all the world to keepe Court in, and being ſo haunted with an earthquake, that in what houſe ſoeuer you are one daye, you are ſhaken out the next, my little Booke might kill three or four porters, that / muſt run vp and downe *London* to ſeeke you, and at the laſt might dye it ſelfe for want of ſuccour before it comes to your hands. Yet it might bee, that ir

Item for you.

Wel put in.

How hardly I leaue this commonplace.

your requeſt you are inſatiable, you will take no excuſe, your will is your reaſon, nay may not be admitted. Well, it ſhall be yours: for your Epiſtles ſake, haue at you with an Epiſtle.

To | the polypragmaticall, parasitupocriticall, and pantophainoudendeconticall Puppie Thomas Nashe, Richard Leichfield wisheth the continuance of that he hath: that is, that he want not the want of health, wealth, and libertie.

Nas hum. Mitto tibi Nashum *prora* N. *puppi humque carentem.*

GOD saue you (right glossomachicall *Thomas*). The vertuous riches, wherewith (as broad spread Fame reporteth) you are indued, though *fama malum*, (as saith the poet) which I confirme: for that shee is *tam ficti prauique tenax, quam nuncia veri*, as well saith Master *William Lilly* in his *Adiectiua verbalia in ax.* I say the report of your rich vertues so bewitched me toward you, that I cannot but send my poore Book to be vertuously succoured of you, that when both yours & my frends shall see it, they may (for your sake) vertuously accept of it. But, it may be, you denie the Epistle, the Booke is of you, the Epistle must be to some other. I answer, you are desirous of an Epistle. Did not *Cæsar*

write thoſe things himſelf which himſelfe did? and did not *Lucius* that golden Aſſe ſpeak of himſelf which was the Aſſe? & will not you (though an / Aſſe, yet neither golden nor ſiluer) patronize that which others tooke paines to write of you? *Cæſar* and *Lucius* for that ſhall liue for euer: and ſo ſhall you, as long as euer you liue. Go too I ſay, he is an ill horſe that will not carrie his owne prouender. But chiefly I am to tell you of one thing, which I chuſe to tell you of in my Epiſtle, both becauſe of Epiſtles ſome be denuntiatorie, as alſo conſidering that wiſe ſaying elſwhere of the preciſe Schoolemaſter: If thy frend commit anie enormious offence toward thee, tell him of it in an Epiſtle. And truly this is a great and enormious offence, at which my choller ſtands vpright, neither will I put it vp. Therefore in ſadnes prouide your Lawier, I haue mine, it will beare as good an action, as if you ſhould haue come into another mans houſe, and neuer ſay, Hoe God be here: that is, you wrote a foule Epiſtle to mee, and neuer told me of it before: you might haue ſaid, By your leaue Sir. I warrant you I write but this ſmall Epiſtle to you, and I tell you of it as long before as the Epiſtle is long. But now I remember me, there was no hatred between vs before, and therefore twould be prooued but chaunce-medley. Let it euen alone, it cannot be

vndone, for a thing eaſely done neuer can be vndone: and a man may quickly become a knaue, but hardly an honeſt man. And thus (maleuolent *Tom*) I leaue thee. From my chamber in *Camb.* to your " " *where cā you tell? That is, that wold folow thee euen to the gallowes.*

Yours in loue *vſque ad aras*
Rich: Lichfield.

You / ſee howe louingly I deale with you in my Epiſtle and tell of your vertues, which (God forgiue me for it) is as arrant a lye as euer was told: but to leaue theſe parergaſticall ſpeeches and to come to your trimming, becauſe I will deale roundly with you, I wil cut you with the round cut, in which I include two cuts: Firſt the margent cut: ſecondly the perfect cut: The margent cut is nothing els but a preparation to the perfect cut, wherby I might more perfectly diſcharge that cut vpon you, for as in a deep ſtanding poole, the brinks thereof, which are not vnfitly called the margents, being pared away, we may the better ſee thereinto: ſo the margents which fitly we may terme the brinkes of your ſtinking ſtanding poole (for it infects the eare as doth the ſtinking poole the ſmell) being cut away, I may the better finiſh this perfect cut and rid my ſelfe of you. To the margent cut. When

firſt your Epiſtle came into my hands, I boldly opened it, and ſcaling the margents of it I eſpied a ſeely note *quaſi conuerſant about heads.* I ſayd not a word, but turning ouer a leafe or twoo more to ſee if you continued in thoſe ſimple animaduerſions, and indeed I ſaw you to bee no changling, for there I eſpied *barbers knacking of their fingers, & louſie naperie,* as fooliſh as the other: *ſemper idem* (thought I) might be your mot, and ſo you will dye: then I began to marke the note which you adioyned to your notes that they might be noted: there toſſing and turning your booke vpſide downe, when the weſt end of it hapned to be upward, me thought your note ſeemed a D, ah *Dunce, Dolt, Dotterell,* quoth I, well might it be a D. and for my life for the ſpace of twoo houres, could I not leaue rayling of thee all in D*s.*

Now to the perfect cut: I cannot but admire you in the / tittle you allow me, ſeeing wee admire monſters as well as vertuous men, and a foole (as oft I haue heard Scholers diſpute in mine office) as a monſter: other Barbers like not the title, it pleaſeth me, and all the Dukes in *Spaine* cannot ſhew the like, and I thinke that halfe a yeeres ſtudy did not bring it out of thy dunſticall hammer-headed ſcalpe; but thou doſt to diſgrace mee, and thinkſt thy title decketh a Barber, and that a Barber with thy title is as a rotten

chamber hangd with cloth of arras: but tis not ſo: alas thy reading affoords thee not to knowe the ancient and valorous power of Barbers.

I could ſpeake howe they flouriſhed amongſt the *Abants*, a fierce and warlike people, and by the Barbers perpolike cunning as it were amending nature and ſhaping their faces to more auſteritie, they became more victorious, as *Plutarch* recordeth in the life of *Theſeus*: and young ſtripplings newly fit for armes, firſt were brought to *Delphos*, and there offered the firſt fruites of their haire to *Jupiter*: next him the Barbers were ſerued and they cut them, and were as *Ioues* Viſes to make them fit for warre. They flouriſhed before with the *Arabians*, the *Myſians*, the *Dacians*, the *Dalmatians*, the *Macedonians*, the *Thracians*, the *Seruians*, the *Sarmacians*, the *Valachians* and the *Bulgarians*, as ſaith *Pollidorus Virgil*: afterward *Alexander* entertained into his campes Barbers as the ſpurres and whetſtones of his armies.

Dioniſius that blood-thirſtie Tyrant that feared no peeres, ſtoode alwaies in feare of Barbers, and rather would haue his hayre burnt off, than happen into the Barbers handes.

Therefore in a Barbers ſhop (as *Plutarche* reporteth) where ſome fewe were talking of the Tyrany of / the tyger *Dionyſius*. What (ſaid the Barber) are you talking of King *Dionyſius*,

whome within theſe two or three daies I muſt ſhaue? When *Dionyſius* heard of this, he gate the Barber ſecretly to be put to death, for feare of after-claps. The Barbers Chaire is the verie Royall-Exchange of newes, Barbers the "head" of all Trades. I could ſpeake of their excellencie, for that a mans face (the principall part of him) is committed onely to Barbers. All trades adorne the life of man, but none (except Barbers) haue the life of man in their power, and to them they hold vp their throates readie.

None but Barbers meddle with the head.

If they be happie, whom pleaſure, profit and honor make happie, then Barbers with great facilitie attaine to happines. For pleaſure, if they be abroad, they are ſoght too of the beſt Companions, Knights and Eſquires ſend for them: if at home and at worke, they are in pleaſing conference; if idle, they paſſe that time in life-delighting muſique. For profite, a Barber hath liuing in all parts of *England*: he hath money brought in as due as rents, of thoſe whom he neuer ſaw before. For honour, Kings and ruling Monarchs, (to whom all men crouch with cap in hand and knee on ground) onely to Barbers ſit barehead, and with bended knees. But for all this, thou ſpareſt not to raile on Barbers (as on all others): & being full of botches and boyles

thy ſelfe, ſpueſt forth thy corruption on all others: but I nought reſpect it, thy raylings rather profite mee. For (as *Antiſthenes* was wont to ſay) a man might as well learne to liue well of his ill-willing & abuſiue enemies, as of his honeſt frends; of theſe, by following their vertues, of the others by eſchuing their actions, by ſeeing the effects that followed thoſe actions in his enemies: and as *Telephus* (beeing wounded, and deſtitute of a ſauing remedie at home) went euen to his enemies and ſworne foes, to get ſome ſoue/erraigne medicine, ſo if of my friendes I could not learne temperance, I might learne of thee, by ſeeing the effectes of thy cankered conuicious tongue, for by that thou art brought into contempt: thy talking makes thee bee accounted as a purſe that cannot bee ſhutte, and as an houſe whoſe doore ſtandes alwayes open; and as that open purſe contayneth no ſiluer, and in that houſe is nothing worthie the taking away, ſo out of thy mouth proceedeth nothing but noyſome and ill-ſauerd vomittes of railinges: Wherefore draw together the ſtringes, and locke vp the doore of thy mouth, and before thou ſpeakeſt ſuch ill corrupted ſpeeches againe, let it be lifted of the hingelles; rule I ſay, that little and troubleſome Vermin, that ſmal tongue of thine; which in ſome is not the ſmalleſt parte of vertue, but in thee the greateſt Arte of vice: not

vnlike the Purple fiſh, which whileſt ſhe gouernes her tongue well, it getteth her foode and hunteth after her praye, but when ſhee negleƈt[eth] it, it bringeth her deſtruƈtion, and ſhe is made her ſelfe a pray vnto the fiſher: ſo that in that ſmall parcell all vertue and vice lyes hidden, as is recorded of *Kias*, whom King *Amaſis* commaunding to ſende home the beſt and moſt profitable meate from the market, hee ſent home a tongue: the king demaunding a reaſon, hee anſwered that of a tongue came many profitable and good ſpeeches, and this tongue thou haſt not: Then the king ſent him to buy the woorſt and moſt vnprofitable meate, and he likewiſe bought a tongue: the king alſo aſking the reaſon of this, from nothing (ſayde he) iſſueth worſe venome then from the tongue, and this tongue thou haſt, and this tongue croſſe with the barre of reaſon, leſt thou ſeeme more fooliſh then thoſe geeſe in *Cilicia*, which when the[y] flie in the night time by the hill *Taurus*, that / is poſſeſt of Eagles, are ſayde to gette ſtones into their mouthes, by which as by a bridle they raine in their cryinges, and ſo quietly paſſe the greedie talentes of the Eagles: but alas why inueƈt I ſo againſt thy tongue? *lingua* or *lingendo*, and you knowe wee vſe alwayes to like in, and ſo thou ſhouldeſt keepe in thy poyſon: or a *ligando*, which is to binde, and ſo thou ſhouldſt binde vp and not

diſperſe abroad that ranker in thee: thy tongue doth but in dutie vtter that which is committed vnto it, and nature hath ſet before it a double bull-woorke of teeth to keepe in the vagrant wordes which ſtraying abroade and beeing ſurpriſed may bewray the whole cittie: and the vpper bull-woorke ſometimes ſerues for a percullis, which when any raſcallie woorde hauing not the watch-worde, that is, *reaſon*, ſhall but enter out of the gates, is preſently lette downe, and ſo it cuttes it of before it woorketh wracke to the whole Caſtell: therefore I muſt of neceſſitie find out another cauſe of thine infected ſpeech: and now I haue founde it, fie on thee, I ſmell thee, thou haſt a ſtinkinge breath: but a ſtinking breath (ſome ſay) commeth of foule teeth: and if it bee ſo, waſh thy teeth Tom, for if thou wouldeſt drawe foorth good and cleane wordes out of thy mouth, thou wouldeſt waſhe thy teethe, as euerie tapſter that goeth to drawe good beare will waſhe the potte before he gooeth: but it may bee the filth hath ſo eaten into thy teeth that waſhinge cannot gette it away: then doe as that venome-bitinge beaſt, that Nile-breede Crocodile, which to purge her teethe of thoſe ſhiuered reedes that are wreathed betweene, by feedinge in the water, commeth to the ſhoore, and there gapinge ſuffereth ſome friendly

Marke this secret allegorie.

bird without / daunger to creepe into her mouth,
Trochilus. and with her bill to picke away the troubling reedes: ſo come you but to ſome ſhoore, and Ile bee that *Trochilus*, Ile picke your teeth and make a cleane mouth, or Ile picke out tounge and all, but of this ſtinkinge breath I ſpeake not. *Tædet anima* ſayth the Comedian, and this I meane not meaning as hee meant, for hee meant a ſtinkinge breath, but by *anima* I meane the forme by
Philosophy. which thou art what thou art, by which alſo thy ſenſes woorke, which giueth vſe to all thy faculties and from which all thy actions proceede: and this *anima* if thou termiſt a breath, this breath ſtinketh, and from this breath (as little riuers flowe from a fountaine) all thy woordes flow foorth and the fountaine being corrupted (as you knowe) likewiſe all the leſſer riuers needes muſt bee corrupted, and this *anima*, this breath or fountayne thou muſt cleanſe: but how to cleanſe this breath it paſſeth my cunninge to tell: for thoughe (as I am a Cirurgeon) I coulde picke your teeth, for the other ſtinkinge breath, yet this I durſt not meddle with, this hath neede of a metaphiſition; and lette it ſuffice for mee rudely to take vppe the bucklers and laie them downe againe, onely to tune the Lute,
How I bewich thee with fecunditie. but to leaue to the more cunning to playe thereon: Count it enough for mee that am but an adiuncte to a Scholler, that haue

nothinge of myſelfe but what I gleane vppe at the diſputation of ſome Schollers in myne office: let it bee ſufficient for mee (I ſay) onely to tell the reaſon of this ſtinkinge breath, and to leaue to more ſounde Philoſophers to determine and ſet downe the remedie of it: but nowe it may bee *teipſum noſcis*, you ſmell your owne / breath, and finde it to bee ſo intoxicated with poyſon that vnleſſe you haue preſent helpe you are quite vndone, you periſh vtterly: and knowing me to be a man of ſuch excellent partes, yea of farre better partes then *Inſpeach bee theſe eight partes*, are very inſtant with me to vnbinde the bundell which I gathered at diſputations, and giue you ſome remedie for this ſtinkinge breath: loe howe vertue in the friend caſteth foorth her beames euer vpon her enemie, I am ouercome, bluſhingly I vndertake it, and like a baſhfull mayde refuſe, yet deigne you that fauour: then marke, firſt goe get ſome ſtrong hempe, and worke it and temper it ſo long together till there ariſe out of it an engine which wee call *Capiſtrum*, then carry this *Capiſtrum* to ſome beame that lyeth acroſſe, for none elſe wil ſerue, when it muſt bee ſtraynde, and the one ende of it faſten to the beame, and one the other make a nooſe of as rounde a figure as you can, for the roundeſt figure is the moſt retentiue: let the nooſe

Ha ha a ragge borrowed from your owne dunghill.

A medicine for a stinking breath.

bee alwayes readie to ſlide, for mans breath is ſlipperie, then when euerie thing is fitted, boldly put through thy heade, then worke the *Capiſtrum* ouer newe agayne, ſwinge vppe and downe twice or thrice that it may be well ſtrainde, and ſo in ſhort time your olde breath will bee gone: diſpayre not yet man, *probatum eſt*, olde *Æſon* was deade a while but reuiued agayne and liued many a yeare after: but marke, nowe to the pynche, if *Platoes* tranſmigration holde, (which ſome menne holde) that the *anima* and breathes of men that bee deade doe fleete into the bodyes of other menne which ſhall liue, then I holde that ſome breath ſeeing thy younge bodie without an *anima*, and twould bee harde lucke if ſome breath or other ſhould not be / yet ſtraying about for a body, their being continually ſo many let looſe at Tiburne, I ſay, ſome vnbeſpoken vagrant breath wil goe in and poſſeſſe thy body: nowe if this remedie helpe not, ſurely thou art vnrecurable: if alſo thy newe breath happen to be as ſtinking as thy olde, thou wilt neuer haue a ſweete breath in this worlde, nor then neither. And thus much of my title.

You knowe or at the leaſt ought to knowe that writers ſhoulde eſhewe lyes as Scorpions, but your lyes that you deuiſd of one, are the greateſt parte of the matter of your Epiſtle, as *My ſhoppe in the towne, the teeth that hange out of my Windowe, my*

painted may-poole, with many others which fill vp roome in the Epiſtle in aboundant manner, and which are nothing elſe but meere lyes and fictions to yeeld the matter, whereby I perceiue howe threede-bare thou art waxen, howe barren thy inuention is, and that thy true amplifying vaine is quite dryed vppe. Repent, repent, I ſay, and leaue of thy lying, which without repentance is very haynous (Pag: 6): that one lye I make of thee in this booke is preſently waſhed away with repentance. An other lye I cannot but tell you of, which you clappe in my teeth in the very beginning of your Epiſtle, which nothinge greeueth mee, for that I ſuppoſe it to bee committed of ignorance, that is you tell mee that you come vpon mee with but a dicker of Dickes, but you come vppon mee with ſeuenteene or eighteene Dickes, whereby I ſee thy ignorance in the Greeke tongue; thou knoweſt not what a dicker is: a dicker is but ten of anything, for it commeth of the Greeke word δεκα which is by interpretation, Ten (*de ka*).

Thou obiecteſt that olde *Tooly* and I differed: I con/feſſe it, I am a man alone, I ſcorne ſuch ragged rent-foorth ſpeech, yet thou mayeſt well praye for the duall number, thou ſcabbed, ſcalde, lame, halting adiectiue as thou art; in all thy guiles, thou neuer hadeſt that guile as alone to

get thee one cruſt of breade; no, I knowe not who had a hande with you in this ſeely Epiſtle: goe too, hee is not a miniſter, he hadde but ſmall reaſon for it: againe, you remember the time when your fellowe *Luſher* and you lay in cole-harbour together, when you had but one payre of breeches betweene you both, but not one penie to bleſſe you both, and howe by courſe hee woore the breeches one day, and went cunny-catching about for victuals, whileſt you lay in bedde, and the next day you wore the breeches to goe begge whileſt he lay in bed: for all the worlde like two bucketes in one well: nowe ſuppoſe, when *Luſher* wore the breeches, that then thou ſhouldeſt haue beene carryed to pryſon, where nowe thou art, verily I thinke thou ſhouldeſt haue eſcaped priſon for want of breeches: or ſuppoſe that at that time thou ſhouldeſt haue beene hanged, I cannot but thinke that the want of a payre of breeches woulde haue beene better to thee then thy neck-verſe, for the hange-man would haue his breeches: no fee, no lawe: but put caſe that with much adoe, by greate extraordinarie fauour ſome good hang-man had done thee this laſt benefitte, that thou mighteſt neuer troble him agayne, and ſhoulde haue giuen thee thy hanginge francke and free (as indeede happy for thee had it bene if this good hap had hapned, for then thou ſhouldſt not haue liued

thus miſerably in this vaine and wicked worlde) I ſay plainely, put caſe thou haddeſt beene hanged, the hangman not ſticking with thee for thy breeches, then *Charon* would haue come vpon you / for his ferry-penny : fie out, money and breeches, as ill as a rope and butter, for if one ſlippe the other holde, with him no *naulum*, no waſtage, and then thou haddeſt beene in worſe caſe then euer thou wert : thus you ſee how the want of a payre of breeches might haue been the meanes to haue made thee eſcape priſon, death and vtter damnation : and O thrice happy *Luſher* that ſhouldſt haue beene away with the breeches at that happy time : but when thou wert in thy chiefeſt pride, if thou hadſt but lent out one payre of breeches thou ſhouldſt have beene thus happy.

Prayſe from the praiſe-worthy, and hee is not prayſed whoſe prayſer deſerueth not prayſe : therefore in theſe places of the Epiſtle where thou prayſeſt mee, I take my ſelfe moſt to bee diſpraiſed, for that thou the praiſer art worthie no praiſe : for howſoeuer thou leade in a fooles paradiſe, like the fiſhe cald a muge (*Mucus ſnotte*) which is ſayde to feede herſelfe with her own ſnotte, for thereof ſhee takes her name, thou feadeſt thy-ſelfe with ſelf-conceite, that whatſoeuer commeth from thee is the verie quinteſſence of true witte, and that all thy ribaldrie that euer thou ſettſt forth, exceeded

in pleaſing mirth, that ſo thou haſt imbraced true *Minuera*, whenas (God knowes) thou art as farre deceiued as euer was poore *Ixion*, that imbraced a cloude in ſteade of *Iuno*, or that guld-god, mõſtrous accadian *Pan*, who in ſteade of that ſweete Nimphe *Syrinx* frumpt a bunche of reedes: yet I muſt confeſſe thou haſte ſomething, thou art as a bundell of ſtrawe that beeing ſett on fire conſumes it ſelfe all in ſmoke, but no warmneſſe commeth from it, ſo thou haſt no true fire in thee, all ſmoother, no thing that can warme a man: thou art as many Ciphers without an 1, which they wan/ting are of themſelues nothing, and thou haſt much apparencie of witte which is as Ciphers, but thou haſt not this ſame 1: Iota is wanting to thy Ciphers, thou haſt not one iot nor title of true witte: againe, as ſome ſouldiers that were at *Cales*, breaking into a ſhoppe for pillage, and there ſeeing many great ſackes readie truſſed vppe, they with great ioy made haſt away with them, and ſo with light hartes carryed away their heauie burdens, and when they brought them into the ſtreetes, opening them to ſee their booties, founde in ſome of them nought but redde cappes, of which afterward they made ſtore of fires, and in the reſt nought but earthen pitchers, chaffendiſhes and piſpottes, and ſuch like: ſo whoſoeuer ſhall ſee thee truſſed vppe and in thy clothes,

might happily take thee for a wiſe young man, but when thou ſhalt be opened, that is, when he ſhall ſee but ſome worke of thine, he ſhall finde in thee nought but raſcallitie and meere deluſions: and for this cauſe thou mayeſt be cald the very *Chorœbus* of our time, of whom the prouerbe was rayſde, more foole then *Chorœbus*: who was a ſeely ideot, but yet had the name of a wiſe man: for he might be cald *Chorœbus quaſi chori Phos*, the light of euery company into which hee came, ſo thou haſt onely the name of a wiſe man and that is *Naſhe*. O wiſe name, I praye thee let mee chriſten you a newe and you ſhall bee called *Chorœbus quaſi chori bos*, the very bull-heade of all the troope of pamphleters: thou goeſt about to gather ieſtes and to barrell them vp into thine ale-howſe index, that when occaſion ſhall ſerue thou mighteſt be a *Democritus* alwayes to laugh thy ſelfe or to cauſe others to laugh by thy ideotiſme. Thus to conclude, as *Daphne* chaſtitie, was turnd into a laurell tree, and ſo kept her chaſtitie, ſo / I wiſh that for thy wit thou mighteſt bee turnd into an aſſe, that ſo thou mighteſt keepe thy wit to thy ſelfe, and not defile the world withall. But this thou ſcornſt, and wilt prooue that thou haſt a good wit, and thus ſubmiſſiuely in eloquence, to make vs beleeue thee, at the firſt word thou beginſt; Nature, that

neuer wont to be vnequall in her gifts, with mee hath broke her wont, and indowed me with a dowrie aboue the reſt of her children : but euerie commoditie hath his diſcommoditie, and we cannot alwaies pleaſe all ; and though all my books did not take as I wiſhed they ſhould, yet moſt of them did take, as *Piers Pennileſſe*, and others which I will not name, to auoyd ſuſpition of vainglorie. *Argus* that had an hundred eyes ſometime ſlept, or els hee had not dyed for it : and when *Mercurie* came, hee had no power to hold ope his eyes. O fine ſpeech! By this I gather, that thou confeſſeſt thy ſelfe to be *Argus*, and me *Mercury :* and if you be *Argus*, holde ope your eyes with a pox to ye. I meane yee no harme yet, yet I pipe not to you : but I thinke it will be my lucke to be as ill a ſcourge to you, as euer *Mercurie* was to *Argus*. But if you will diſpute and prooue that you haue a good wit, awaye with your confuſed bibble babble, binde vp your Arguments into Syllogiſmes and I will anſwere you directly. Content ſay you, and thus you begin. If my fame be ſpred far abroad, & all the Countrey confirme that I haue a good wit, then tis true that I haue a good wit: But the firſt propoſition is true, therefore I haue a good wit. I anſwer, Poore and illiterate Opponent, to contex no firmer argument againſt ſo firme a Logician as I am. A double

Reſponſe or Aunſwere extempore I can affoord you. Firſt, though your name bee blazed abroad, it followes not that you ſhould haue a good wit: for as an emptie veſſell will ſound farre that hath nothing in it; ſo you may / cracke your ſelfe abroad, and get to be reported the man you are not.

Secondly, I graunt that you are famous, and that the Countrey reports you wiſe. Sententiouſly I aunſwere, that by a figure the Countrey is taken here for the common rout onely: for none that can but write and read will euer agree to it; and *turba malum argumentum*, as much as to ſaye, the troubleſome Commons aſſertion, neuer goes far currant. Thus leauing no hole for you to creepe in with a ſecond obiection, you betake you to your ſecond Argument.

If my wit (ſaye you) were not excellent and vnaunſwerable, manie who are accounted to haue good wits, (to whom I haue oft giuen particular occaſion) would haue anſwered mee: but they haue not anſwered mee, therefore my wit is excellent. Therefore I wyll aunſwere thee.

I would to God thou & I were to diſpute for the beſt Mayorſhip in *Spaine*; faith thou mighteſt euen caſt thy cap at it. Dooſt thou not know that the Lion ſcornes combat with the bace? Wiſe-men (though mooued) will not worke

reuenge on euerie obiect? and the more ſtately oake, the more hardly ſet on fire? More plainly in a ſimilitude, the like reaſon is to bee gathered of the nettles.

Euen as the nettle keepeth her leafe cleaneſt, for that no man purgeth his poſt-pendence (there your noſe *Thomas*) with it; not becauſe they cannot, but becauſe it would ſting them if they ſhould, and ſo for that ſmall good turne, it would worke them a more diſpleaſure: ſo thou art ſuffered to be quiet, and not wrote againſt, not for that thou canſt not bee aunſwered, but that by aunſwering thee they ſhould but giue more fodder to thy poiſon, put more caſting to thy gorge; and hee that intends / to meddle with dung, muſt make account to defile his fingers.

Thus thou art quite put downe, thou art drawne drie: me thinkes I perceiue thee wiſh for ſome Moderatour, that ſhould crie; *Egregie Naſh* (or, you great aſſe) *ſatis feciſti officium tuum.* And now for want of a Moderatour, my ſelfe (for fault of a better) will ſupplye that roome, and determine of our Diſputation. And herein it ſhall not bee amiſſe, (the Queſtion ſo requiring, and you alſo requiring it in that place of your Epiſtle, where you lay wit to my charge) firſt to tell what a good wit is. And whereas thou burtheneſt me to ſay, that *much extraordinarie*

deſcant cannot be made of it: thou lyeſt. For how vniuſt were mans wits, not to affoord vs extraordinarie deſcant of that, which giueth vs deſcant for euerye thing?

A good wit (therefore) is an affluent Spirit, yeelding inuention to praiſe or diſpraiſe, or anie wayes to diſcourſe (with iudgement) of euerie ſubiecte. Miſtake me not (I pray you) and think not that I thinke all thoſe to haue good wits, that will talke of euerie ſubiect, and haue an oare (as we ſay) in euerie mans boate: for manie fooles doo ſo, and ſo dooſt thou. Theſe talke not with iudgement: they be like the Fellow, who ſwearing by God, and one ſtanding by, correcting him, ſaid; Fie on thee how thou talkeſt. What ſkills it ſaid hee, ſo longe as I talke of God? So I ſay, thou careſt not how without iudgement thou talkeſt on euerie thing.

A good wit is it that maketh a man, and hee is not a man, that hath not a good wit. The verie brutiſh and ſauage beaſts haue wit. Oxen and Aſſes by theyr wit chooſe out the beſt Paſture to feed in, and thou art no better: for diuers men will ſay, and eſpecially Northeren men, to one that dooth anie thing vnhandſomely, whaten / a Naſh it is, for what an aſſe it is, and an Aſſe all men know hath not a good witt.

Thus (by theſe deſcriptions) the definitiue ſen-

tence of my determination is this; *Naſhe*, thou haſt not a good wit, thou art a ſilly fellow, and more ſilly than Syr *Thomas* of *Carleton*, who beeing a little ſicke, and the bell tolling to haue him goe read Seruice, the Clarke of the Pariſh going to him, and telling him that the bell toalde for him, meaning to goe Read, he went preſently and made his will, becauſe the bell toalde for him: and ſo doo thou, plye thee, make thy Will, and dye betimes before thou beeſt kill'd, for thine owne wit will kill thee: and call you that a good wit that kills a man? All the Wiſemen of *Greèce* and *Gotam* neuer came to the miſerie that thy good wit hath brought thee too. My minde preſageth the great confuſion that thy good wit will bring vppon thee. For as the Cammell that (come hee into neuer ſo cleare a Fountaine) cannot drinke of the water, till hee hath ſoyled and fowled it with his feete: ſo whatſoeuer thy wit goeth about, it firſt defiles it, and ſo brings deſtruction to thine owne bodie. Thy wit, thy wit *Tom*, hath no roddes in piſſe for thee, twil whip thee, twill worke thine ouerthrow, twill quite deſtroye thee: *Acteon* (as wiſe a man as you) no wayes could eſcape it, for all his loue to his hounds, and ſwift flight when he ſaw their felnes, but was deuoured of his owne dogs.

But why then (maiſt thou ſay) doo I oppoſe

my ſelfe againſt an Aſſe, ſeeing now I doo no more than all could doo, for all the beaſts in the field can inſult and triumph ouer the ſilly Aſſe, as well the creeping Snayle to her power as the fierceſt Tyger. *Aſinus a ſedendo*, becauſe euerie Childe can ride an aſſe: therefore tis rather a reproachfull ſhame for mee to meddle with thee, and / by that I get more diſcredit then the two Gods got diſhonors that conſpired the downe-fall of one ſeely, weake, vnable woman. The reaſon is, I onely am left to tell thee thou art an Aſſe, and if thou ſhouldſt not be tolde it, thou wouldſt not beleeue that thou art an Aſſe. Therefore nowe at length knowe thine owne ſtrength, and knowing that thou art but feeble and haſt no ſtrength, bluſh and be aſhamed, and then thou ſhalt ſee that all the Country hath ſeene thy ignorance, though kept in ſilence, and howe this many a yeere thou haſt guld them, but they (gentle minded auditors) ſtill, ſtill expecting better, tooke all in good part whilſt thou like a cowardly vnſkilfull horſeman mounted on a iade, coruetteſt and ſheweſt thy Crankes among a company of valorous famous captaines, whoſe ſtirrop thou art not worthy to holde: alight and liſten vnto me, and I euen I, that neuer till now was acquainted with the preſſe, and acknowledge myſelfe farre vnfit for thoſe thinges thou profeſſeſt, I (I ſay) will read thee a

Lecture: harken, in my gibbridg (as thou termſt it) I wil conſter thee this ſhorte diſtich, which though it wants an author wants no authoritie.

Thaida te credis duxiſſe, ſedilla Diana eſt,
Namque Actæoneum dat tibi Caura caput.

Ingenuouſly thou thee complainſt an Irus poore to be
But thou art Midas for thou art an Aſſe as well as he.

Or thus.

Some ſayes Naſhe is laſciuious, but I ſay he is chaſt,
For he by chacing after whores, his beard away hath chaſt.

Otherwiſe.

Who ſaies Naſh riots day & night, about the ſtreets doth lye,
For he in priſon day and night in fetters faſt doth lye.

Againe.

You ſay I am a foole for this, and I ſay you ſay true,
Then / what I ſay of you is true, for babes and fooles ſay true.

Now I giue not euery word their litterall ſence, and by that you may ſee how I preſume of your good wit, to ſee if by alluſions you can picke out the true meaning, but I vſe a more plaine de-

monſtration and apply it to your ſelfe: for if you will vnderſtand any thing aright, you muſt euer apply it to your ſelfe. It may bee thou likeſt not theſe verſes for that they want riming words, and I ende both the verſes with one word: no, *Tom*, noe, thinke not ſo, bewray not ſo thy poetry, for that diſtich is beſt contriued, and moſte elegant that endes both verſes with one word if they import a diuers ſence: but now I ſee thou art no verſifier, thou haſt only a proſe tongue, & with that thou runſt headlong in thy writing with great premeditation had before, which any man would ſuppoſe for the goodnes, to be extempore, and this is thy good wit: come, I ſay, come learne of me, Ile teach thee howe to pot verſes an houre together.

Thou nothing doubteſt (as thou ſayeſt) of the *patronage & ſafe conduct of thy booke*, and indeed thou needeſt not doubt, for I neuer ment it harme, but alwayes wiſht it might ſafely paſſe by me: yet as I was patron to it, I could not but read ſome of it, but I thinke if I had read it through twould haue poiſoned me, it ſtunke ſo abhominablye: therefore all the while I was reading of it holding my noſe: fye, out ſaid I, had I but knowne this Cockatrice whilſt twas in the ſhell, I would haue broken it, it neuer ſhould haue beene hatcht by my patronage: but tis no matter, thy

eye-beames will reflect vpon thy ſelfe, and will be burning glaſſes to thine owne eyes.

And ſo in a fury (the countries comming downe vpon / me) I like a ſtout patron out of all the countries that preſt me ſore, chalenged out the moſt valiant warrier of them all, *Mounſeir Aiax*, to ſingle combate: him I ouercame, and of him I got ſafe conduct, and hee hath promiſed ſafe conduct to all commers of that race, and moreouer, hee as another patron hath gotten for them all ſafe conduct from hence to *Eely* by water. The good admonition thou giueſt mee, that is to commence, I thankfully take and willingly would vndergoe, had I but one with whome I might keep mine acts.

As for mine anſwere I nothing doubt, that is kept (as I hope) with credit, but my replie is it I ſtand on, I can get none to anſwere me: alas, thou art not able, neyther fit, for thy want of a beard taketh away halfe the ſubiect of our diſputation: not that I ſay a beard would make thee wiſe and ſo by that thou ſhouldſt be fit to diſpute, but becauſe in what Arte thou wouldſt haue mee commence, in that I would diſpute with thee: therefore ſuppoſe I ſhould demaund of thee the reaſon why thou haſt ſo much haire on thy head, and ſo thinne or rather almoſt none at all on thy face? thou couldſt not queintly anſwere, becauſe

the haire on thy head is twenty yeeres elder then that on thy beard, nor in naturall reaſon, becauſe the braine ſeated in the head yeeldeth more moyſture about it then any way downeward, by which moyſture haire commeth, but thou haſte too moiſt a braine that cannot holde and remember theſe thinges, or rather thou haſt too hard and drye a braine, and ſo theſe thinges were neuer impreſt into it.

But / this is thine anſwere, tis Gods wil it ſhould bee ſo: Thou wert neuer borne to haue a beard: tis true indeed, thus thou mighteſt anſwere to all the arguments in the worlde: but the want of a beard makes thee thus colde in anſwering, for a beard is a ſigne of a ſtrong naturall heate and vigour: but the true anſwere is, thou ſeekeſt too many wayes to caſt out thine excrementes, thou art too effeminate, and ſo becomſt like a woman, without a beard. Againe, if I ſhould demaund of thee why the haire of a mans head groweth downeward and not vpward, *idem reuolueres*, this would bee thine anſwere, becauſe it pleaſeth nature. Doſt thou not know that haire is the couer of the head? and therefore if it will couer it muſt lye downe: and doe not all the parts of a man growe downeward, though the whole man growes vpward? And therefore the Philoſophers ſay that a man turned downeward is a plant: that as a

plant hath all her boughes, branches and leaues growe vpward, ſo all the parts of a man are vpwarde when he ſtandeth on his head, as his feete, legs, armes, noſe, fingers and the reſt: but in faith thou turnd vpward or downeward art but a plant or ſtocke to bee ignorant in thoſe thinges: why I maruell of what Art thou didſt Commence Batchelor: if I had but the queſtion that thou hadſt at thy Sophiſters Act, I would diſpute on that: but nowe I ſee I cannot commence for want of an anſwerer, and I ſcorne to keepe myne acts *in tenebris.*

In this thy trimming, thou being ſo fit for it, I will worke a wonder on thee, and I will holde any man a wager that I will perform it, that is, whilſt I am waſhing you I will requeſt your *conniuence* and put my ſelfe to *conniuence*, and ſhaue you quite through, and when I haue done, you ſhall not be a haire the worſe. You may make / a riddle of the ſame if you will, but I will doe it, and when I haue done, raiſing my ſelfe on my tiptoes, I will ſo hunt thee for my pay, that thou ſhouldſt bee in worſe caſe then the Beuer, who bites off his ſtones and layes them in the way for the hunter: for which otherwiſe he ſhould be hunted to the death: I thinke veryly and in my conſcience, *I ſhould breake thy head and not giue the reſt againe.*

Leaning on a iest.

Thou rude wretch, thou wilt be ſo *coſmologizd*,

if thou beeſt catcht heere, for calling our Maſters of Arte firſt *Stigmaticall*, that is burnt with an hot Iron : didſt thou euer know any of our Maſters of Arts burnt with any Irons? then thou calleſt them *ſinckanters*, which is a proper Epithite vnto thyſelfe, for *Sinckanter* commeth of *ſincke* and *antrum* a hole, and as all the puddle and filth in the channell, ſtill runnes all along till it comes to a hole or *antrum*, and there it ſinckes in : ſo all wickednes and abhord villany ſtill ſtraying abroad and ſeeking for an *antrum*, at laſt it findes thee which art the very ſincke and center where it reſtes. And ſurely if thou ſhouldſt haue termed me ſo, I neuer would haue ſuffered it vnreuenged, for as the *Torpedo* being caught and layd on the ground, ſtriketh a torpour and numbnes into the hand of him that doth powre but water on her : ſo, I doe not thinke but that in thy Epiſtle thou calledſt me but *Dick*, which is my name contract, and other adiuncts which in their own nature are neither good nor bad, the very remembrance of me ſtroke ſuch a feare and numbnes into thy ioyntes, that yet thou ſhakeſt as not diſpoſſeſt of that fearefull feauer. I will ſtirre thee vp and make thee ſeething hot, and when thou art in thy heate, I will then quell thee by moouing of thee more and more, as when a pot ſeetheth if we lade it and mooue the liquor vp and down, euen while

it ſeetheth, wee ſhall make it quiet. Thou / little wotteſt of what a furious ſpirite I am, for I keeping among ſuch ſpirits in this place, as thou ſayſt, am my ſelfe become a ſpirit, and goe about with howling cries with my launce in my hand to tortour thee, and muſt not returne home, till *Ignatius*-like thou ſhalt be carbonadoed, and I ſhall carrie on my launce-point thy bones to hang at my ſhop-windowe, in ſteed of a cronet of rotten teeth, as the trophies of my victorie : and this ſhalbe done, commeſt thou neuer ſo ſoone into my ſwinge.

Therefore keep out of my hant, I haue a walke, thou maiſt be blaſted before thou commeſt neere my walke : if thou doſt but looke backe and ſee mee in my walke, thy necke will ſtand awry, thy mouth diſtorted, thy lips vgly wreſted, and thy noſe hang hooke-wiſe. But rather I take thee to be a ſpirit, for that I talking with thee all this while, cannot haue a glance on thee.

Spirit walks.

But ſee, what art thou heere? *lupus* in *fabula*, a lop in a chaine? Nowe ſirra haue at you, tha'rt in my ſwinge. But ſoft, fetterd? thou art out againe: I cannot come neere thee, thou haſt a charme about thy legges, *no man meddle with the Queenes priſoner*: now therefore let vs talke friendlye, and as *Alexander* ſayd to hys Father

Phillip, who beeing ſorely wounded in the thigh in fight, and hardly eſcaping death, but could not / goe on the ground without halting, bee of good courage father, come foorth that euery ſtep thou ſets on the ground may put thee in minde of thy manly courage & vertue: ſo ſay I to thee, *Naſhe* come forth, be not aſhamed of thy ſelfe, ſtretch out thy legs, that euery ſtep thou goeſt, thy ſhackles crying clinke, may remember & put thee in minde of all thy goodnes and vertue: I am glad to ſee thee in this proſperitie, thou neuer wert ſo rich as now, thou neuer hadſt ſo much money as would buy ſo faire a payre of fetters; in very deed thou art beholding to thy keeper, that will truſt thee with ſo faire a payre of fetters, neither would he if hee had thee not by the legge: but nowe thou art a good caſe, thou art no vagabond, now thou ſerueſt a Maſter, and haſt a houſe to goe to, and a coutch to lye in, thou muſte bee thriuing and prouident where thou art, and twill bee a good ſauing for thee: now thou haſt a clog at thy heele as the prouerbe is, thou muſt learne of *Aeſops* dog to do as he did: that is, thou muſt crinch vp thy ſelfe round in thy couch all winter time and dreame of a goodly large chamber, faire lodgings and ſoft beds, and in the ſummer time thou muſt ſtretch thy ſelfe, lye all abroad ſnoring vpon thy couch, and thinke that ſilly lodging

(ſeeing thou feeleſt no cold) a ſtately chamber built of free ſtone, layd out with ſtately bay windowes for to take the ayre at. But what neede I tell thee of theſe thinges? thou knoweſt better then I howe to lye in pryſon: for what a ſhame were it elſe for thee, that haſt many a day agoe beene free of all the pryſons in London, nowe to learne thine occupation? Thou art a iourney-man long ſince: I doe not thinke but that thou art able to ſet ope ſhop in that trade: for if thou wert but a nouice in it, this deere yeere would quite kill thee.

Holes in the top.

But / ſay, how doſt thou for victualls, doo not they of thy old acquaintance helpe thee? if euer thou hadſt true frend, now let him ſhow himſelfe, for a frend is tried in aduerſitie: and though the Romanes were wont to ſay, that a true frend was but the ſalt and ſauce of a banquet; yet I ſay, that a true Frend to thee muſt be ſalt, ſauce, bread, and all the meate beſide. But thou haſt neuer a true Frend, yet thou haſt enough of thoſe frends, that would be ſauce to thy meate; that is, if thou couldſt bid them to a ſupper, they would come to eate vp thy meat, and ſawce it with fine talke. But (God knowes) thou haſt no need of thoſe frends, thou couldeſt bee ſauce to thine owne meate. Fie on frendſhip, what is become of it? not one drop nor crum of

UNIVERSITY

frendſhip betweene them all? A true Frend (as they ſay) were more neceſſarie than water and fire: for vnles hee come and call for it, thou canſt not haue ſo much as fire and water; that is, a fire with a cuppe of ſmall drinke by it to nouriſh thy bodie. What is become of thoſe true Frends *Damon* and *Pythias*, *Caſtor* and *Pollux*, *Pylades* and *Oreſtes*, *Niſus* and *Euriolus*, *Perithous* & *Theſeus*, whom death it ſelfe could neuer ſeperate? Dead? Then *Ioue* raiſe ſome deadly tyrant to maſſacre that cancred brood of thy companions, that leaue their ieſter deſolate in the winter of his affliction. I curſe them with more vehemencie, becauſe I ſee ſome hope in thee, in that thou now ſeemeſt ſimply to betake thee to the truth. For whereas thou wert wont to cracke and brag abroad, and indeuouredſt to ſhew, that ther was no learning in which thou wert not expert, and how that thou wert indowed with plentie of the liberall Sciences; which thou knoweſt to be nothing ſo; now thou recanteſt, and in ſimple truth ſaiſt, thou haſt no learning, no not ſo much as one of the liberall Sciences. Which thou ſheweſt vnto vs by comming foorth in thy fetters,/ for none of the ſciences are bond-ſlaues, or kept in chaines: they are called liberall *quaſi liberi* becauſe they make men free. If theſe are not ſufficient motiues for thee, happily let this moue thee, that by thy proficiencie

in philoſophy ſince thou camſt into priſon, thou hearing of *Aeſop* that dwelt in a tub; of *Anaxagoras*, who, in priſon wrote his eſpeciall booke *Of the quadrature of the Circle*: of *Socrates*, who in priſon ſtudied Philoſophy, and wrote verſes, and yet (as *Cardan* ſaith) ſlept ſweetly, ſo as *Socrates* gaue more light to the priſon, then the priſon gaue darknes to *Socrates*: And laſtly of him that put out his owne eyes, and ſo eclipſt himſelf of the ſight of the world, that he might haue a more cleere inſight into the light of nature: keep thou thy ſelf ſtill in priſon, eclipſe thee from the ſight of the world, gaze onely on thy ſelfe, that ſo thou more cleerely ſeeing thine owne deformed nature, mightſt labour to reforme it, and bring thyſelfe into light againe. But (ſaiſt thou) you are a merry man M. *Dicke*, it befits not the wiſe to mocke a man in miſerie. In truth thou ſaiſt true *Tom*, and for my mindes ſake I would not for a ſhilling but that thou hadſt beene in priſon, it hath made my worſhip ſo merry; but becauſe thou continueſt my precepts that am a Cambridge-man, from whence all vertue flowes, and is the very fountaine and Cunduit-head of all learning. O heere I could praiſe Cambridge an howre by the clocke.

Therefore I ſay, for thy contempt of me I will call thy keeper, and tell him how th'art ſtolne out of

priſon & come to mee to helpe thee off with thy ſhackles. Noe *Thomas* noe, I am no pick-locke, I thanke God: I liue without picking, though thou liueſt not without lockes. But are you gone? thou wert afraid of thy keeper, goe to the place from whence you came, & with a knaues name to / you. Ha, ha, if I had but followed this matter euen a little more, I could haue perſwaded thee to liue and dye in priſon. Alas, I could doo anie thing with thee now, all thy ſenſes are ſo taken downe. Happie (quoth I) in priſon? hapleſſe indeed. How happie is the owle caught faſt in a lyme-bough, when all the ſmaller birdes doo chatter at her for ioye? How happie the Rat caught in a trappe, and there dies a liuing death? How happie the tyred Hart ſtriken of the Hunter, who runnes panting, conſuming her breath, and at laſt faints for want of breath? how happie the wearied hare purſued with dogs, euer looking when they ſhall teare her in peeces? and how happie the cunny-catching weaſell inſnared in the Parkers net, and hangd vpon a tree? thus happie art thou: with the owle thou art lymed and wondred at, with the Rat thou art ſore preſt, with the Hart thou art in a conſumption, with the hare thou alwaies expecteſt a teareing, and with the weaſell thou ſhalt be hanged. All theſe torments are in priſon, a demi-hell, where (like fiends) the

priſoners crawle about in chaines, euerie one perplext with his ſeuerall paine; a darkſome laborynth, out of which thou canſt neuer paſſe, though guided by a thred.

O double vnhappie ſoule of thine, that liues ſo doubly impriſoned, firſt in thy bodie, which is a more ſtinking priſon than this where thou art; then, that it accompanieth thy bodie in this priſon. Were it not ſufficient that one priſon ſhould tortor thy ſoule enough? No, firſt becauſe thy ſoule hath too deepe a hand in all thy knaueries, tis ſo impriſoned and fettered to thy bodie, that it cannot go without it. Poore Soule, more miſerable than the kings daughter captiuated & long time kept impriſoned in the Theeues houſes, at laſt offering to / breake away, was condemned to be ſewed into the Aſſes bodie & there to dye; for the aſſes bodie was dead, and nothing aliue in the aſſe (the priſon) to trouble the Maid the priſoner. But thy priſon is aliue, and all the affections in thy bodie are as ſtinking vermine & wormes in it, that crawle about thee, gnawing thee, and putting thee to miſerie. She in ſhort time was ſure to die, and ſo to be free againe; thou art ſtill in dying, and hoping for freedome, but ſtill liueſt, and this augments thy calamitie: ſhe ſhould haue had her head left out to breathe into the aire, but thou breatheſt into thy priſon thy

Apostrophe Apuleius.

bodie, that corrupts within thee, and ſo retournes to bee thyne owne poyſon. Thus much miſerie (poore ſoule) thine owne bodie affoords thee, and by being with thy bodie in the ſecond priſon, all this is doubled. Now if thou wouldeſt bee free from thy priſons, make a hoale in thy firſt priſon, breake out there, and ſo thou eſcapeſt both, thou neuer canſt be caught again: and by this thou ſhalt crie quittance with thy bodie, that thus hath tormented thee, and ſhalt leaue him buried in a perpetual dungeon.

Continuata Metaphora.

Here let mee giue a cut or two on thy lateſt bred excrements, before I goe to the finiſhing of the perfect Cut.

A little lumpe of lead, while it is round, will lye in a ſmall roome, but being beaten it will ſpread broad, and require a larger place to contain it; and a roape bound faſt vp, might eaſily be couered, but vnfolded & drawne out at length, it hardly can bee hidden: ſo you (ſimply conſidered) are of no report, but if you bee vntruſt and beaten out, & your actions all vnfolded, your name cannot be limitted. And now you, hauing a care of your credite, ſcorning to lie wrapt vp in obliuion, the moth of fame, haue augmented the ſtretcht-out line of your deedes, by that moſt infamous, moſt dunſicall and thrice oppro / brious worke *The Ile of Dogs*: for which you are greatly in requeſt;

that, as when a ſtone is caſt into the water, manie circles ariſe from it, and one ſucceedeth another, that if one goeth not round, the other following might be adioyned to it, and ſo make the full circle: ſo, if ſuch infinite ſtore of your deedes are not ſufficient to purchaſe to you eternall ſhame and ſorrow, there ariſe from you more vnder then to helpe forward: and laſt of all commeth this your laſt worke, which maketh all ſure, and leaueth a ſigne behind it. And of this your laſt worke, I muſt needes ſay ſomewhat: for ſeeing that this my firſt work & off-ſpring hath remained in my womb beyond the time allotted, it muſt needs be growen greater; and if it become a monſter, it muſt needes be in exceſſe. Cropt ears.

O yes, O yes: if there be anie manner of man, perſon or perſons, can bring anye tidings of Tho: Naſhe Gentleman, let hym come and giue knowledge thereof, & hee ſhalbe plenteouſly rewarded. A proclamation for T. Nashe.

Hearke you *Thomas*, the Crier calls you. What, a fugitiue? how comes that to paſſe, that thou a man of ſo good an education, & ſo wel backt by the Muſes, ſhouldſt prooue a fugitiue? But alas, thy Muſes brought thee to this miſerie: you and your Muſes maye euen goe hang your ſelues: now you

may wiſh, that he that firſt put the Muſes into your head, had knockt out your hornes. But ſeeing it hath ſo happened, call for your *Thalia* among your Muſes, let her play ſome muſique, and I will dance at / your hanging? But twas prouidence in thee, to foreſee thy woe, and to labour to eſchew it, if not by auering what you haue ſaid, and ſtanding too it, yet by ſhewing your heeles. For as the Prouerbe; *Ubi leonina pellis inſufficiens eſt, vulpina aſtutia aſſuenda eſt.* If by ſtrong hand you cannot obtaine it, light heeles are to be required: for one paire of legs are worth two payre of hands. And of all the parts of thy bodie, thy legges are thy moſt truſtie ſeruants: for in all thy life whenas thou couldeſt not obtaine of anie of the parts of thy bodie to effect thy will, yet legs thou hadſt to commaund for to walke and flee whether ſoeuer was thy pleaſure, neither now in this extremitie doo they deceiue thee. O, how mutch art thou beholding to thy legs? *Bankes* was not ſo much beholding to his Horſe, that ſerued to ride on, and to doo ſuch wonderfull crankes, as thou art to thy leggs, which haue thus cunningly conuayed thee. If euerie begger by the high wayes ſide (hauing his legs corrupted and halfe deſtroyed with botches, byles and fiſtulaes) maketh much of them, getteth ſtilts and creepeth eaſily on them, for feare of hurting them, becauſe they

maintaine them, and prooue better vnto them than manie an honeſt Trade ; then why ſhouldeſt not thou (by an argument *a malo in peius*) make much of thy legs, which by ſpeedie carriage of thee from place to place to get thee victualls, do not onely maintaine thy life, but alſo at this time haue ſaued thy life, by their true ſeruice vnto thee. Wherefore (theſe things conſidered) thou canſt not chuſe but in all humilitie offer thy old ſhooes for ſacrifice to *Thetis* for thy ſwift feet. And twas wiſely done of that high dread Liech *Apollo* to appoint *Piſces* the ſigne to the feete, to ſhew that a man ſhould be as ſwift as a fiſh about his affaires. Neuertheleſſe can I accuſe you of lazines: for all this time of your vagation, with you I / thinke the Signe hath been in *Piſces*. Now in this thy flight thou art a night-bird, for the day wil bewray thee : the Bat and the Owle be thy fellow trauellers. But to come roundly vnto you, this cannot long continue ; the Owle ſometime is ſnared in the day ſeaſon, and olde Father Time at length will bring you to light. Therefore, were you as well prouided to continue your flight, as is the beaſt *Ephemeron*, which becauſe ſhee hath but one day to liue, hath manie legs, foure wings, and all what Nature can affoord, to giue her expedition to ſee about the world for her one dayes pleaſure : or as *Pegaſus* that winged Horſe, which in ſwiftnes equalleth the

Horſes of the Sunne, which in one naturall day perambulate all the world : or as the beaſt *Alce*, which runneth on the ſnow with ſuch celeritie that ſhe neuer ſinketh vnto the ground. Were you (I ſay) as ſwift as anie of theſe, you ſhall be catcht, ſuch is your deſtinie : and then your puniſhment ſhall be doubled on you, both for your flying, and your other villanie.

Since that thy Ile of Dogs hath made thee thus miſerable, I cannot but account thee a Dog, and chyde and rate thee as a Dog that hath done a fault. And yet doo not I know why I ſhould blame Dogs? for *Can*, which ſignifieth a Dog, is alſo a moſt truſtie ſeruant; for that Dogs are faithfull ſeruants, to whome their Maſters in the night time giue in charge all their treaſure. They are at commaund to waite vpon their Maſters, whether they bend their iourney, to fight for them againſt their enemies, and to ſpend their liues to defend them, and to offend their aduerſaries, as we read of King *Cazament* : who beeing exilde, brought with him from baniſhment two hundreth Dogges, which (with wonderfull fierceneſſe) warred againſt their reſiſtants : in whom hee repoſed much more confidence & hope of victorie, again to / be ſeated on his throne, than if hee had been defended by a mightie hoaſt of armed men. And *Iaſons* dogge, his maſter being dead, neuer would eate anie

meate, but with great griefe and hunger died for companie. *Tycinus* the *Sabine* had a dogge which accompanied hym to priſon, and when he was dead, he remained howling by the carcaſſe : to whom when one caſt meate, he laid it to the mouth of his dead maſter, to reuiue him againe: and when his corpes was throwen into the riuer *Tybris*, the dogge leapt after it, ſo that all the people wondered at the loue of this faithfull creature. *Pirrhus* the King going a iourney, came by a dogge which kept the bodie of a dead man : which when hee ſaw, he commaunded the bodie to be buried, and the dogge to bee brought home with him : this done, a few dayes after came ſouldiours before the King, among whom the dogge eſpyed them which killed his maſter, and barked inceſſantly at them ; ſometime looking and fawning on the King, and then barked againe. At which ſigne the King aſtoniſhed, examined them, and vpon light examinations they confeſſed the murder, and tooke puniſhment for it. Further, we read of a dogge called *Capparus* in *Athens*, which in the night purſude a Theefe that robbed a Church, & being driuen backe with ſtones by the Theefe, followed him aloofe off, but alwayes kept him in ſight, and at laſt came to him, and ſat by him while he ſlept. The next morne, ſo ſoone as euer the ſunnes golden crowne gan to appeare, and his

fierie ſteedes trapperd in their capariſons ſet on their wonted race, the theefe fleeing, the dogge ſtil kept his chaſe, and complaind in his language to the paſſengers of the theefe. At laſt he was taken and brought backe, before whom the dog came all the way leaping and exulting for ioy, as to whome all the prayſe was due for this deed.

The / *Athenians* decreed that for this publique good, the dogge ſhould be kept by publique charges, and the care of his keeping was alwaies afterward layd vpon the Prieſts. And I feare mee, and almoſt diuine ſo much, that the verrie dogges (whereſoeuer thou plaiſt leaſt in fight) will bewraye thee and bring thee to thy torture. Againe, (among the *Aegiptians*) *Saturne* was called *Kyon*, becauſe as a pregnant woman, he begot all things of himſelfe and in himſelfe; and in antique time they worſhipped dogges, and had them in great account, till on a time when *Cambyſes* killed a man and caſt hym away, no other beaſt but a dog rauened in the dead carcaſſe.

Laſtly, to come neerer to your ſelfe, you ſhall heare of a dogge that was an excellent Actor. In *Rome* there was a ſtage-player, which ſet out a Hiſtorie of diuers perſonages, among whom there was a dogge to be poiſoned and reuiue againe ; a Part of no leſſe difficultie than the King or the clowne, and was as well perfourmed :

for (at his time) he eate the poyſon, and preſently (drunkard-like) ſtackered vp and downe, reeling backward and forward, bending his head to the ground, as if it were too heauie for his bodie, as his Part was; and at laſt fell downe, ſtretcht himſelfe vpon the ſtage, and lay for dead. Soone after, when his Cue was ſpoken, firſt by little and little he began to mooue himſelfe, and then ſtretching forth his legs, as though he awaked from a deepe ſleepe, and lifting vp his head, lookt about him: then he aroſe, and came to him to whom his part was he ſhould come: which thing (beſides the great pleaſure) mooued wonderfull admiration in olde *Veſpaſian* the Emperour there preſent, and in all the other that were ſpectators.

Theſe prettie tales of dogges might keepe mee from chi/ding of thee, but thou art no ſuch dogge; theſe were all well nurtured when they were whelps, you not ſo: the worme was not pluckt out from vnder your tongue, ſo that you haue run mad, and bit venome euer ſince: for theſe are the properties of a mad dog. Firſt, the blacke choller which raigneth in them turneth to madnes moſt commonly in the Spring-time and in Autumne: and you though you are mad all the yeere, yet haue ſhewed the ſigne of it eſpecially this laſt Autumne; they alwaies run with their

mouthes open and their tongues hanging out: wee know howe wide your mouth is, how long your tung; your mouth is neuer ſhut, your tongue neuer tyed: ſlauer and ſome fall from their iawes as they run, and tis but ſlauer that proceedeth from thy mouth: though their eyes be open, yet they ſtumble on euery obiect; ſo though thou ſeeſt who offends thee not, yet thou all offendeſt: they whoſoeuer are bitten with a mad dog alſo run mad, and they whom thy vlcered tongue did bite, are ſo ſtirred vp by it, that till they haue got you and wormed you, they cannot be well: thus you may ſee to what miſery you were borne. Woe to the teats of thy Dam that gaue thee ſuck, and woe to blind fortune, that ſhe opened not her eyes to ſee to affoord thee better fortune: and woe to the dog-daies, for in thoſe thou wroughteſt that which now works thy woe: take heede heerafter what you do in dog-daies. The natures ſecretaries record of that kinde of goate called *Oryx*, that all the yeere her throate is ſhut, the ſtrings of her voice tyed, til dog-daies come, & then that very day and houre in which the dog-ſtarre firſt appeareth (at which time dog-daies begin) ſhee openeth her voyce and crieth: the like miracle theſe laſt dog-daies haue done of thee, for what all the whole yeere could not bring to paſſe, and all the Country long haue

ex / pected, that is, thy confuſion, theſe dog-dayes by thine owne wordes haue effected: therefore happy hadſt thou beene if thou hadſt remained ſtill in London, that thou mighteſt haue bin knockt on the head with many of thy fellowes theſe dog-daies: for nowe the further thou fleeſt, the farther thou runſt into thy calamitie: there is watch layd for you, you cannot eſcape; th' art in as ill a taking as the Hare, which being all the day hunted, at laſt concludes to dye, for (ſaid ſhe) whether ſhould I flye to eſcape theſe dogs: if I ſhould flye to heauen, there is *canis ſidus celeſte*: if I ſhould run into the ſea, there is *canis piſcis marinus*, and heere on earth millions of dogges ſeeke to torment me; aye me, heauen, earth and ſea conſpire my tragedy.: and as wofull as the Cunny which eſcaping the Weaſell fell into the hunters net, of which was that pythie Epigram, Would to God the Weaſell with my bloud had ſucked out my life, for nowe I am kept a pray for the rauening dogs, and cruell-harted mã ſits laughing whilſt my body is broken vp, and my guts deuided into many ſhares: and though yet thou haſt eſcaped thy ſnares, it will not bee long ere thou beeſt taken, and then the'rs laughing worke for all the Country; for though thy body were ſhared out into infinite indiuiduals, yet euery one could not

The dog-starre.
The dog-fish.

haue his part whome thou haſt abuſed, for recompence for thy iniury done vnto him.

Nowe let mee ſee thy puniſhment for thy Iſle of dogges: tis an auncient cuſtome in our Countrie when wee take a dogge that hath done a fault, preſently to crop his eares; and this ſurely for thy fault is thy puniſhment: but why (might ſome ſay) are thine eares puniſhed for thy tongues fault? I / anſwere, thine eares are worthy to be puniſhed for not diſcharging their office: for whereas they ſhould heare before thou ſpeakeſt, as they that be ſkilfull at the ball, firſt receiue the ball before they caſt it foorth againe; and into a veſſel there is firſt infuſion before there be effuſion out of the ſame; the ouer pregnant dog (we ſee) bringeth forth blind puppies, and the ſpider that prepares her matter and weaues her webbe together at the ſame time, makes but ſlender worke of it, and eaſie to be broken of euery flye. I ſay, whereas thou ſhouldſt firſt haue heard, thou firſt ſpeakeſt: thy tongue was in thy eares place; and for this cauſe thine eares are iuſtly puniſhed.

Nature gaue thee two eares and but one tongue, becauſe thou ſhouldeſt heare more then thou ſhouldeſt ſpeake, but becauſe thou haſt ſpokē more than euer thou heardſt, thine eares ſhall bee taken from thee: She ſet thine eyes and thine eares both of equall highnes and alwaies open, that they

might bee ready to heare and to ſee, but thy tongue ſhe put into a caſe that it might bee ſlowe to ſpeake; but thine eares were dull to heare, and thy tongue too quicke of ſpeach: Therefore thine eares deſerue their puniſhment: Then to bee ſhort, to haue thine cropt is thy puniſhment: What *Tom*, are thine eares gone? Ha, ha, ha. *O fine man will you buy a fine dog?* Why thou art in the faſhion, thou art priuiledged to weare long lockes by ancient charter: Crop-eard first wore lockes. but now if the faſhion were as hot as euer twas to weare ringes in their eares, faith thou muſt weare thine euen in thy tongue, becauſe that coſoned thee of thine eares: are thy eares ſo moueable? art thou a monſter? indeede all beaſts haue free mouing of their eares graunted to them, but for men I neuer knew any but thee haue their eares mouing, and thine I ſee to haue the gentle quite remou[d]: I thinke tis a diſeaſe, / for I am aſſured tis a horible paine to bee troubled with the mouing of the eares. I coniecture no goodnes by this ſtrange accident of moueable eares this yere. I hope ſhortly we ſhall haue Ballads out of it. I am afraid I tell you by this ſtrange ſigne, that we ſhall haue a wet winter this yere: for if it be true (which the Philoſophers affirme) that when an Aſſes eares hang downe toward the ground, tis a certaine ſigne of raine inſtant, then ſeeing

thine eares not only hang toward the ground, but euen drop down to the ground, how can it chuſe but be a ſigne of great wet at hand? and to thee it ſhould be a cauſe of perpetuall ſhowers that ſhould flow from thine eyes: but thou art drye, no droppe of grace from thine eyes. If taking away of thine eares could take away thy hearing too, twere ſome profit for thee, for then thou ſhouldſt not heare thy ſelfe railed on, laughed at, nor know thy ſelfe to be a mocking ſtocke to all the Country: but there is a more plaine way made to thy hearing organs, ſo that thou ſhalt more lightly heare thy ſelfe euery where cald crop-eard curre. What wilt thou giue me if I (I am a Chirurgion) make a newe paire of eares grow out of thy head, which paſſeth *Appolloes* cunning, that ſo thou maiſt ſtil liue with fame in thine own countrie, or if I heale them as though thou neuer hadſt any, that I may goe with thee into Germanie and there ſhew thee for a ſtrange beaſt bred in England, with a face like a man, with no eares, with a tung like a venomous ſerpent, and a noſe like no body. The laſt I care not if I conſented to, if thou woldſt liue in good order but one half yere: but to the firſt, that is to giue thee new eares, I neuer wil grant thogh thou ſholdſt be inſpired to liue orderly al the reſidue of thy life, no though I had wax & al things ready: for long

agoe haſt thou deſerued this diſgrace to be eareleſſe, euer ſince thou beganſt to write: for libels deſerue that puniſhment, and euery booke which yet thou / haſt written, is a libell, and whomſoeuer thou nameſt in thy booke hath a libell made of him, thou purpoſing to ſpeake well of him; ſuch is the malice of thy cankerd tongue. Therefore thou deſeruedſt to looſe thine eares for naming the Biſhop of *Ely* and of *Lincolne*, and for writing of *Chriſtes teares ouer Ieruſalem*: how dareſt thou take ſuch holy matters into thy ſtinking mouth, ſo to defile and polute them? Your Dildoe & ſuch ſubiects are fit matter for you, for of thoſe you cannot ſpeak amiſſe: the more you raile of thē the neerer you touch the matter: but becauſe you were not puniſhed for thoſe libels, you began your olde courſe againe, *canis ad vomitum*, you began to chew the cud of your villanie and to bring more libels into light. But I hope this laſt libell will reuenge the reſt.

We heare howe you threatned to ſpoile our ſtirring Satiriſt: alas, haue thy writings ſuch efficacie? indeed they are poyſoned, but poiſon will not worke on euery ſubiect: and if thou ſhouldſt but name him, ſo that it might giue but any blemiſh to his fame, aſſure thy ſelfe to bee met withal of troops of Scholers which wil ſoone make thee be one of *Terence* his paraſits: in wounds

thou ſhalt exceed *Caſianus* which was ſo pittifully pinked of his own Schollers: & now whilſt I am in the hot inuectiue, I haue a meſſage to doe to you: the townſmen of *Cherrihinton* ſend you cõmendations, & they demaund a reſon of you why you call them clownes? they ſay, they neuer offered you any wrong, wherefore if euer you come that waye, they will ſend all the dogs in the town after you to pluck off your ears if they be not gone before you come. Now I thinke it be time to remember my promiſe to the readers, that is that I be not irkeſome to them with tediouſnes, that ſo they might with good acceptance digeſt what hetherto they haue read: therefore I will drawe toward an end and ſo finiſh the perfect Cut.

Where / as thou commendſt thy Epiſtle to me as a garment for a foole, and therefore that it ſhould bee long: I (as is thy deſire) haue cut it with my ſciſſers, layd it ope, and according to that pattern haue made a coate for thy ſelfe, but it is ſo ſhort that thou ſhalt not neede to curtaile it: for ſome fooles haue long coates for that cauſe onely, that they might the better hide their folly and couer their nakednes, which els all ſhould ſee: yet I haue made thy coate ſhort and little, that by thy behauiour in it thou mayſt bewray to others thy ſimplicitie, & if I had tooke in hand to haue

made it great enough to couer al thy folly, this is not the twentieth part of ſtuffe that wold haue ſerued, neither poſſibly couldſt thou haue had thy new coate againſt this time: but ſeeing thy garment is diſpatcht for thee, weare it and vſe it well, for the faſhion of long cloathes is wearing away, & ſhort cloathes will ſhortly be in requeſt againe, and then thou ſhalt be a foole of the faſhion, as ſoone as the proudeſt of them all.

Againe, this coate for thy body and the coole irons for thy legges, will be a moſt cooling ſute for thee all this Summer time: therefore make much of it, let it not bee thy euery day ſute, but as the *Utopians* were wont to make them ſutes of leather, which laſted ſeuen yeeres, in which they did all their labour, and when they went abroade they caſt on their cloakes, which hid their leather cloathes and made them ſeeme comely and handſome: ſo if thou canſt but get ſome old, greaſie, caſt fuſtian ſute to weare within dores, this coate will ſerue thee to caſt on to iet abroad in, and doe thee credit.

Wherefore (good *Tom*) I exhort thee to keepe thee (whilſt thou art) in good caſe, thou art well apparelled, it may bee thou preſently wilt beſtowe a coate of mee: doe not ſo, all thy coates are threed-bare / and I neede them not, though thou haſt many, for I know thou haſt three or foure

coates ready made (like a ſaleſman) for ſome body: then, to which ſoeuer thou ſoweſt but a patch or two cõcerning me, that coat ſhal ſerue me: thou putteſt diuers ſtuffe into one coate, and this is thy vſe in all thy confutations, as in this thy book thou bringeſt into the partie againſt whom thou writeſt, his brothers: which argueth (as I ſayd before) want of inuention; but ſkils not, thou art priuileged neuer to goe from the matter, it might as well bee permitted in thee as in the hiſtorian, that promiſing to ſpeake of the faith of the Iewes, made a long tale of *Nilus*: but (as I ſaid) be a good huſband *Tom* and keep thy coate to thy ſelfe, thou wilt need them al: and when this coate which I beſtowe on thee ſhall waxe threedbare, I will dreſſe it for thee the ſecond time and giue it thee againe.

This I ſpeak not to wage diſcord againſt thee, but rather to make an end of all iarres, that as wife & huſband will brawle and be at mortall fewde al the day long, but when boord or bed time come they are friendes againe and louingly kiſſe one another: ſo though hetherto we haue diſagreed and beene at oddes, yet this one coate ſhall containe vs both, which thou ſhalt weare as the cogniſaunce of my ſinguler loue towards thee, that wee liuing in mutuall loue may ſo dye, and at laſt louing like two brothers *Caſtor* and *Pollux*, or the

two ſiſters *Vrſa maior* and *Vrſa minor*, wee may bee carried vp to heauen together, and there tranſlated into two ſtarres.

Finally, theſe thinges conſidered aright, in loue I beſeech thee (that thou maiſt ſee I am not paſt grace) to ſuffer mee to retort thy grace, and ſo to end: which my ſelfe will follow for you ; you ſuing */ub forma pauperis. /*

A Grace in the behalfe of Thomas Naſhe.

To all ballet-makers, pamphleters, preſſe hanters, boon pot poets, and ſuch like, to whom theſe preſents ſhall come, greeting: Wheras *Tho: Naſhe* the bearer heereof, borne I know not where, educated ſometime at *Cambridge*: where (being diſtracted of his wits) he fell into diuers miſdemeanors, which were the firſt ſteps that broght him to this poore eſtate. As namely in his freſh-time how he floriſhed in all impudencie toward Schollers, and abuſe to the Towneſmen; inſomuch that to this daye the Townſ-men call euerie vntoward Scholler of whom there is great hope, *a verie Naſhe*. Then being Bachelor of Arte, which by great labour he got, to ſhew afterward that he was not vnworthie of it, had a hand in a Show called *Terminus & non terminus*: for which his partener in it was expelled the Colledge: but this foreſaid *Naſhe* played in it (as I ſuppoſe) the

Varlet of Clubs; which he acted with ſuch natural affection, that all the ſpectators tooke him to be the verie ſame. Then ſuſpecting himſelf that he ſhould be ſtared for *egregie dunſus*, and not attain to the next Degree, ſaid he had commenſt enough, and ſo forſooke *Cambridge*, being Batchelor of the third yere. Then he raiſd him ſelfe vnto an higher Clime; no leſſe than *London* could ſerue him: where ſomewhat recouered of his wits, by the excrements thereof (for the ſpace of nine or ten yere) hee hath got his belly fed and his backe cloathed. As alſo I hope you are not ignoraunt how hee hath troubled the Preſſe all this time, and publiſhed ſundrie workes & volumes, which I take with me as humble fellow-ſuters to you, that you being all in one ſtraine (and that very low, he in a higher key) you would vouchſafe to take him as your graduate Captain generall in all villanie; to which villanie conioyn your voyces and in which villanie praye and / ſay together, *Viuat, moriatur Naſhe.* To theſe premiſſes, that they are true, and that hee among you all is onely worthie this title, I (as head Lecturer) put too my hand.

Richard Lichfield.

But *Tom*, thy ſelfe art paſt grace: for ſome of thyne owne faction, enuying thy proficiencie and

honour to which thou aſpireſt, hath pocketted thy Grace. O enuie, catterpiller to vertue! But let him know that thou haſt a Patron will ſticke to thee, and that thou art gracious in more Faculties than one; I will put vp another Grace for thee; wherein he ſhall haue no voyce, and one onely man an old friend of thine ſhall ſtrike it dead.

A Grace in the behalfe of Thomas Naſhe, to the right worſhipfull and grand Commander of all the ſuperrants & ſubtercubants of Englands great Metropolis, the Prouoſt Marſhall of London.

Foraſmuch as *Thomas Naſh* ſundrie and oftentimes hath been caſt into manie priſons (by full authoritie) for his miſ-behauiore, and hath polluted them all, ſo that there is not one priſon in *London*, that is not infected with *Naſhes euill*: and being lately ſet at libertie, rangeth vp and downe, gathering poyſon in euerie place, whereby he infecteth the common aire; I am to deſire you, that as you tender the common good of the weale publike, and as the vertue of your office requireth, which is to clenſe the City of all vitious and vnruly perſons, when this aboue named *Naſhe* ſhall happen into your precinctes or dioces of your authority, you would giue him his vnction in the higheſt degree, and clenſe vs quite of him, which you ſhall effect thus: ſend him / not to priſons any more, which are corrupted by him already, but commit

him to be *Proctor of the Spittle*, where hee ſhall not ſtay long, leaſt hee breed a plague among them alſo: but paſſe frō him to Bull, who by your permiſſion hauing ful power ouer him and being of ſuch amiable and dexterious facility in diſcharging his duety, will ſoone knit the knot of life and death vpon him, ſtrōger then that Gordian knot neuer to bee looſed, and by that pritty tricke of faſt and looſe, will looſe your Cittie from him and him from all his infections, and will hang him in ſo ſweet & clear a proſpect as that it wilbe greatly to your credit to ſee the great concourſe thether of all ſects of people: as firſt I with my brethren the Barber-Chirurgions of London, wil be there, becauſe we cannot phlebotomize him, to anatomize him and keep his bons as a chronicle to ſhew many ages heereafter, that ſometime liued ſuch a man, our poſteritie hauing by tradition what he was, and you in ſome part might be chronicled (as well as S. George) for deſtroying this ſerpent: thē there will flock all the Cunni-catchers of London to ſee the portraiture of the architectours of their arte: laſtly, al the Ballad-makers of London his very enimies that ſtayed his laſt grace, will be there to heare his confeſſion, and out of his laſt words will make Epitaphes of him, & afterward Ballads of the life and death of *Thomas Naſh*. Let this grace paſſe as ſoone as

may bee : if not for any perticular loue to him, yet as you are a Magiſtrate of the Cittie, and ought to knowe what tis to prefer a publike commoditie if this grace paſſe not, hee is like to bee ſtayde finally till the next yeere. I his head-lecturer preſent him to you.

Richard Lichfield.

Thus / (curteous Gentlemen) I haue brought you to the ende of his trimming, though he be not ſo curiouſly done as he deſerueth : hold mee excuſed, hee is the firſt man that euer I cut on this faſhion. And if perhaps in this Trimming, I haue cut more partes of him then are neceſſarie, let mee heare your cenſures, and in my next Cut I will not be ſo lauiſh : but as the Curate, who, when he was firſt inſtald into his Benefice, and among other Iniunctions being inioyned (as the order is) to forewarne his Pariſh of Holy-daies, that they might faſt for them : and thinking all thoſe Holy daies which hee ſaw in hys Calender written with red letters, on a time ſaid to hys Pariſhioners, You muſt faſt next wenſday for Saint *Sol in Virgo*, which is on thurſday, becauſe he ſaw it in red letters. Which mooued laughter to the wife of the Pariſh ; who preſently inſtructed him, that ouer what red words ſoeuer he ſaw *Faſt* written, thoſe hee ſhould bid Holi-dayes : ſo in ſhort time

he became expert in it. In like manner, I hauing but newly taken Orders in theſe affaires, if heere I haue been too prodigall in *ſnip ſnaps*, tell me of it, limit me with a Faſt, and in ſhort time you ſhall ſee me reformed.

FINIS./

VIII.

THE STORY OF MERCY HARVEY, SISTER OF DR. GABRIEL HARVEY— LOVE-SUIT WITH A NOBLEMAN.

1574-75.

NOTE

Thomas Nash among the many gossip-tales worked into his answers to Harvey, slyly and ungallantly, brings up an alleged 'going astray' of the Scholar's sister 'Mercy.' In the published books there are only passing notices and denials of this ; but in the 'Letter-Book,' (as before) there is preserved perhaps as extraordinary a narrative of old-world making suit as is anywhere to be found. It has been represented to me by those who have a right to be heard, that this Narrative ought to find a place in Harvey's Writings. It accordingly follows. See Notes and Illustrations in Glossarial-Index, *s.v.*; also Nash's Works and their Glossarial-Index, *s.v.* I gladly avail myself of Mr. E. J. Long Scott's painstaking reproduction of Sloane MS. 93, in the British Museum ('Letter-Book,' pp. 143-58). He thus comments on it :—"Now we come to the strangest episode in the whole 'Letter-Book,' where Harvey writes out at full length, with scarcely any attempt at concealment, the whole story of a young married nobleman making a dishonourable pursuit of his sister Mercy. It is true he does not give the nobleman's surname or title, but he mentions his Christian name of Phil, and tells of his aunt, 'my lady of W——'; so that it would be quite possible to satisfy our curiosity by a slight search, if any good were to be gained by raking up old scandals. . . . We learn that this courtship took place during the winter of 1574-5, which we are told . . . was a marvellous wet year at Christmas-tide, by reason of the rain and snow that fell together. The discovery of the correspondence by Gabriel himself seems to have put an end to the disgraceful affair ; at least, we hear no more of the matter after his letter to the young lord" (Preface, p. xvi).

A. B. G.

1. A Sundaie ſupper at Mr. S.

2. The firſt meating in ỹ feild a litle ſtraunge, moouing ỹ matter a far of, without offer of anie thing, vppon ỹ Munday ſennight after.

3. The 2 meating in ỹ feild more plaine, with wines, cakes, glooues, girdell, ỹ next Tueſday being halliday, a halliday breakefaſt.

4. A thre or fower daies after at J. R. ỹ small inameld ring with a ribben of vrring tanye.

5. Milord and his man P. ỹ next Weddenſday preſently after fiue a clock in ỹ euening (a marvelous foggie miſtie eueninge) came vp ỹ ſtreate purpoſely to ſpeake with ỹ maide, and ſeing ỹ dore ope, ſtepd in; but P. ſpying in ỹ maulthowſe (P. had on foote in ỹ mault howſe) ỹ maides mother and ſiſter with ſum of ther ſeruantes, ſum turning ỹ mault, ſum ſteaping, ſum looking on, they were faint to get them homewards, as wiſe as thei cam. A great iorney loſt. Milord ſwore to P. he had rather haue ridden fortie miles then haue taken ſutch a iorney in ſutch a miſtie night.

6. Herevppon ỹ maide writt her firſt letter, then on vppon an other as thei followe in order. With ỹ " thirde " ſeconde letter of Milords, cam a prettie bowed goulden ring, which P. ſwore Milord tooke from his owen fingar to ſende her.

All this time of letters ſending had P. manie a ſhrode wettie iorney, and euermore in ỹ euening, nether could he ſpeake with ỹ maide, but thurrough a pale, for all this while he neuer cam in her fathors howſe, nether could he cum to ỹ ſpeach of her, euerie time he cam, but nowe and then loſt his iorny.

A Noble Mans Sute to a Cuntrie Maide.

Firſt his man P. bad her to ỹ eating of a coople of cunnies in ỹ towne, which ỹ yung lord was priuie too, as P. ſwore afterward.

Within a ſennight after, P. watchd her going a milking a mile from ỹ towne, hauing with him a bottle of mamſey and ſhort chakes, to mooue her appetite.

The mamſey was drunk of, and ỹ chakes eaten in a wood they paſſid thurrough, none being there but P. and ỹ maide and a pore woman that bare ỹ maide cumpanie.

The woman going a litle aſide to gather vpp ſticks that lay ſcattering in ỹ wood, P. began to commenſe his maſters ſute, marry not ſo flatly as

afterwarde, to feele of a like ỹ maides minde. The maide could not be brought to beleeue his maſter ether knewe her, or would motion any ſutch ute to any other, hauing ſo goodlie a ladie of his owne.

P. was well prouidid to anſwer to all ſutch doubtes, and ſwore deepely to ỹ maide, that both his maſter knewe her (by that token, that ſhe paſſing once by him, when he was bowling in ſutch a place, her hatt blue of, and ſhe therewith ſumwhat chaungid her colour) and ſet more by her than he did by his owne ladie.

She ſtill was vnbeleeuing, ſaying ſhe knewe well Mielord paſſid not for ſo homelie wenchis, that ſhe was but a milkmaide, and a plaine cuntrie wench, and if Mielord were ſo diſpoſid he might haue manie a on at commaundiment far more likelie then ſhe.

P. notwithſtanding all this continued his ſute, and would needes make her take a good faier ſylk girdell and a hanſum paier of glooues that Mielord, he ſaid, had ſent her, prommiſing her, with many a luſtie othe, that if ſhe would graunt Mielord his requeſt, ſhe ſhould not neede to care for ỹ leefiſt frende ſhe had, but ſhould be thus and thus maintainid. Still ỹ maide kept aloofe, and made verie ſtraung, taking it to be P. owne ſute, and not Mielords. Wherevppon P. ſwore he would

bring ſum other token from Mielord, that ſhe ſhould not chooſe but think it was he, and no other, that deſirid her cumpanie.

Within a daie or twoe after he brought her a prettie inammeld ring with this poſie, DON JAMYE, which he ſwore Mielord took from his owne hatt not two howers before, whereon it was ſowen, giuen him by his awnt, Mieladie of W , ſaiing Mielord would as leeue haue ſent her half a ſcore ould aungels, but that thoſe might as likely cum from ſum other man.

Theſe thinges ſeemid maruelous ſtraung to ȳ cuntrie wenche, in ſo mutch that ſhe was half amaſid at ȳ matter, and therefore could not well tell what anſwer ſhe ſhould returne to Mielord. Only, like a good plaine wench, ſhe ſaied ſhe could not but thanke him for his loouing tokens. Marry, yeeld vnto him ſhe durſt not in aniewiſe. And ſo pleaded for hir honeſtie as well as ſhe could ; nether would giue anie ſignification of graunting his requeſt.

Whereat P. ſaied he maruelid mutch, hauing ſo faier offers of Mielord ; ſwearing that if ſhe were his owne ſiſter he would counſell her, and deſier her too, to yeeld vnto him. Yea, ſaith he, by the bodie of God, you make more ſtraung than moſt gentlewomen would do of fiue hundrid pounds a yeare. And aſſure yourſelf Mielord maie haue manie

a good gentlewoman and ladie tooe at commaundiment ; by the Mas, if you denie him his requeſt, you ar the verieſt foole in ỹ world; with a manie ſutch whot and erneſt wordes. Whereto ỹ maide knewe not well what to ſay, but wild him to deſier Mielord to be contentid, ſhe could not in that caſe fulfill his minde. Marry, any other way ſhe thought her ſelf bownde to his Lordſhip in reſpect of ſutch kindnes. Still P. laied at her to appoint ſum place where Mielord might meete with her, for Mielord was maruelous deſirous to ſpeake with her.

Alas, ſaid ſhe, I knowe not in what ſort to behaue mieſelf before his Lordſhip ; what ſhould he ſo deſier to ſpeake with me ?

Well, in the end, the maide being thus importunately laied at, that at ỹ leſt Milord might cum to ỹ ſpeach of her, prommiſid that if he would cum ouer to her fathers howſe, in ſutch a ſtreat, vppon ſutch a daye towards the euening (this day was Weddenſday, almoſt a ſennight after,) ſhe would be there to ſpeake a word or twoe with him. This day came, and Milord and P. cam according to ther appointment. But in ſteade of the maide her ſelf, which was not there, there were as it happenid in ỹ maulthowſe the maides mother, her ſiſter, and two of her fathers ſeruants, and in ỹ parlour on of her bretheren, that ſa[w]e them cum faier and ſoftly vpp ỹ ſtreate, and ſtay a

prettie while at ŷ dore, looking of a like to be interteinid of ŷ maide, but ſhe not being at hande, as thei hopid for, thei ſteppid both prettely in to ŷ entry, and P. went pering to ŷ maulthowſe dore to ſpie if ſhe were there, but hauing on of his fitt in ŷ maulthowſe, he ſa[w]e that he lookid not after, and miſſid that he came for. Wherevppon thei conueied themſelues away as hanſumly as thei could, and were fainte to gett themſelues homewards as they cam, being well mirid and weried for ther labour, beſides that it was the miſtieſt and foggieſt night that was that winter.

Notwithſtanding this, P. vſid meanes to ſpeake with ŷ maide againe within a day or two after, telling her howe Milord was diſapointid, and what a weriſum and toiling iorny he had taken in vaine, ſaiyng, moreouer Milord did half ſuſpect ſhe mockid him, &c.

The maid quitt herſelf as hanſumly as ſhe could of the præſent, ſaying that ſhe could not poſſibely be there at that time as things fill owte : and if ſhe had bine there, there had bene no ſpeaking with Milord at that time, &c.

Marry to ſatisfie Milords mind, who, as P. ſaied, thought himſelf deludid, ſhe prommiſid within a daye or twoe to purge herſelf to Milord by letter. Which was as P. would haue it, for then he thought her deade ſuer.

P. cummes me the next night for her letter.

It was not finniſhid.

He cummes againe ỹ next daye.

She could not be ſpoke withall.

Bye the third daye ſhe had addreſſid "her" this letter, and gaue it vnto P. at his cumminge:—

Milord, thowgh mie bringing vpp hath bene allwaies ſo homelie and milkmaidelike, that I know not in what ſort to behaue mieſelf towards your lordſhip, ether for talk or for other ſeemelie behauiour; yet to ſatisfie your lordſhips minde (hauing receiuid your louing token, which notwithſtanding I allwaies doutid was ſum other mans that bore me gud will) I was mindid truly to ſpeake with you ỹ laſt euening, had there not bene ſutch blocks in ỹ way that I could not poſſibely do as I was mindid. I beſeech you, good Milord, pardon me: truly if I would neuer ſo faine, I could not at that time, as it fill owte, haue ſpoken with you. And yit, alas, what is in me, pore wench, that Milord A. S. ſhould deſier to ſpeake with me? The thing you wot of, Milord, were a great treſpas towards God, a great offens to the world, a great greif to mie frends, a great ſhame to mieſelf, and, as I thinke, a great diſhonor to your lordſhip. I haue hard mie father ſaie, Virginitie is ỹ fairiſt flower in a

maides gardin, and chaſtitie ȳ ritchiſt dowrie a pore wench can haue.

Theſe things, Milord, and ſutch other make me aferde to yeeld to your requeſt; though truly I am verie ſorie your lordſhips requeſt is ſutch that I may not ſafely yeeld vnto it. I beſeech you, good Milord, haue me excuſid, though I make ſtraung with youer lordſhip in ſo daungerous a matter. Thus, hoping your good lordſhip will take all in as gud part as it is ment on mie part, I take mie leaue moſt lowly and humbly of you.

Your lordſhips anie way els at commaunde,

PORE M.

I pray, Milord, rent this paper alltopeeſis, leſt it chaunce by ſum miſhap to cum to light, and ſo turne to your diſhonor, which I would be loth.

To this letter Milord returnid an anſwer ȳ next euening as followith.

Fearing, as P. ſaid, that ſhe had her ſecretarye, and deſiring an anſwer to his letters ȳ next daye.

THE YUNG LORDS FIRST LETTERS.

I haue receiuid your letters. I doe not anie thing miſlike of your great ſhowe of chaſtity, and yit I hope that you wil be none otherwiſe vnto me then I looke for. I did thinke it mie great goodhap that it was mi luck to make choiſe

of the aboue ỹ reſt, both bycauſe I knewe nature hath delt better in faſhioning the then with any other here about, and alſo that being ſo giuen I might more ſafely dele with the then with many other common gallantes, by whome I might reape that frute which hardly while I liud I could recouer. I proteſt here before God, and vowe to thee, whome I loue beſt, that I was neuer of that vnconſtant minde to deceiue any woman, nether can I be of that diſſembling nature to profeſs great looue where I do not like.

The next day after ſaue on, ỹ maide anſwerid by letter in this wiſe:

Milord, if I did nether feare God, nor ſtand in awe of mie frendes, nor paſſe what report went of me, then ſutch letters, from ſutch a man, ſo louingly written, ſo full of lauiſh prommiſes and rewards, might perhaps allure me to yeeld vnto you. But God forbid, Milord, that anie perſwading words or faier prommiſſis ſhould præuaile with me in that matter, wherein I ſhould ſo greevuſly offend ſo manie, and ſo ſhamefully caſt away mieſelf. Chaſtitie, they ſay, is like vnto time, which, being ons loſt, can no more be recoouerid.

Good Milord, pardon me, though I deale plainely with you. It is no ſhowe of chaſtitie, as your Lordſhip imagins, but chaſtitie indeede, that I care for. You may haue other gallants,

I know, at commaundiment. I pray, mielord, ſpare me, and make your ſute to ſutch as wilbe as reddie to take as you to offer.

Alas, Mielord, what talk you of crueltie on mie part in not graunting your deſier, or of vnhappineſs on your part in not enioying your deſier? Iwis, Mielord, it wilbe ỹ beſt for vs both that I be thus cruell, and you thus vnhappie. And, howſoeuer it be, truly I cannot yeeld vnto you. And this is all ỹ anſwer I can make to your long letters. I pray your lordſhip be contente.

Youres as before and no otherwiſe,

PORE M.

Vſe this paper I pray, as you did ỹ other. I can keepe youer counſell, though I cannot fulfill your requeſt.

Milord replieth ỹ next day at night on this manner.

And for his farewell ſendith a ſmall gould ring from his owne fingar.

THE MAIDES FAREWELL.

Milord, if youer ſute were as honeſt as it is erneſt, truly you ſhuld not be ſo reddie to make it, but I wuld be as willing to graunt it. For I cannot nowe but think youer lordſhip hath ſum fanſie to me indeede, not only in ſhowe, that haue ſo oft ſente your man to me to intreate for you, loſt ons a

iorny yourſelf in a miſtie foggie euening to ſpeake with me, and nowe laſt of all writt two ſutch larg and louing letters, all to be ſpicid with ſugrid words and honyſweet offers. For which tokins of gud will I cannot for manners ſake but thanke you, though I dare not, for mine owne ſake, yeeld vnto you. Good lord, that you ſhuld thus ſeeke after ſo baſe and cuntrie ſtuff abrode, that haue ſo coſtly and courtlie wares at home. You looue me beſt, you ſay, and præfer me in looue before any other, and eſteeme me more then you eſteeme yourſelf. Alas, Milord, howe can you; I being ſo baſe and abiect in compariſon of your lordſhipp? You haue anſwerid mie thre pointes at large, but not at full. I ſtill feare ȳ worſt. I would be loth to yeeld to you in a madnes, and euer after ſorrowe to mieſelf in good ſadneſs. You knowe well, Milord, the matter muſt needs bruſt owte in ȳ end on mie part, beit clokid neuer ſo lordly on your part.

And then were I, pore wench, caſt vp for hawks meate, to mine owne vtter vndoinge, and mi frendes exceeding greef. And yit ar there a manie things mo to be fearid. Good Milord, wey mie caſe a litle better, and you will leaue of your whot ſute, I doute not. And thus I take mie farewell of your lordſhip, after ȳ beſt faſhion I can for mie bringing vp, prommiſing you

vnfainedlye neuer to bewraye your ſecrets, but to giue you mie gudd word whereſoeuer I becum. As your letters beare me in hande, I haue gudd cauſe to doe.

Your lordſhips, as afore,
Seing you will needs call me ſo,
CRUELL M.

I knowe not I, what you meene by your conqueſt, but it matterith not greatly.

Milord culd not quiet himſelf with this farewell, but ſettes vpon her with a freſh reioinder, as followithe.

The maide being reſoluid to write no more, yit vppon ŷ receipt of ſo loouing a letter, thought good to make an ende with theſe fewe lines.

You knowe full well, Milord, faier words make fooles faine, and you weene of a like. Maides will refuſe and take; but I would not you ſhould thinke me a chaungeling. Wary would I faine be: cruell can I not be; and your Lordſhip is vnſatisfied, but not vnhappie. Vnhappie am I rather, that ———, but there a ſtrawe. Tis not inke and paper, your man telles me, that can content Milord.

What, then, but put vp mie pen,
And pray God amende you?

An that be crueltie tooe, I knowe not what to dooe,
But pray God ſende you.

Yours as ſhe may,
And not as you ſay,
Though it greeue ye.
Yours as ſhe can,
And not as you ſcan,
You may beleeue me.

And thus I pray you ſtay.
PORE M.

To this letter Milord made no anſwer by writinge, but ſent his man P. to deale with her, that he might ſpeake a word or twoe with her as ſhortly as might be. Wherevnto with mutche adooe ŷ maide grauntid.

This was ŷ Thurſday before Chriſtmas Day (1574), Chriſtmas Day being vppon ŷ Satterday. And the maide appointid Sundaye to meete with Milord againe.

And prommiſid to ſpeake with him vpon ſutch a day, at ſutch a neighbours houſe. Milord was there at ŷ day and time appointid, and ſent for ŷ maide by on of ŷ houſe. The maide within les then a quarter cam, and ſpake with him. Milord ſtud reddie in a litle parlour in his dublet

and his hoſe, his points vntruſt, and his ſhirt lying out round about him. And after a ſhort ſalutation, and a twoe or thre kiſſes would needs haue laid ŷ maide on ŷ bedd.

The maide would none of that, but bad him fie for ſhame, and ſo by ſtruggeling ſhifted as well as ſhe might.

The good wife of ŷ howſe, perceiuing ŷ winde in that dore, gat me her ſelf owt in to ŷ ſtreate at a ſide dore, and cam and knockid alowde at her owne dore, and tould on in ŷ howſe M. mother had ſent for her in all haſt.

This was M. own deuiſe beforehand, that if ŷ gentleman, that would be heere vppon ſutch a night to ſpeake with her, ſhould ſtay her neuer ſo litle, that ŷ woman would præſently knock at her dore, and ſay ſhe was ſent for.

M. hearing ŷ knocking, ſaied ſhe was ſuer it was for her, and therefore tould him ſhe muſt needs begon præſently.

Wherevppon mi yung lord fill to ſwearing, and praied M. very inſtantly to yeeld vnto him.

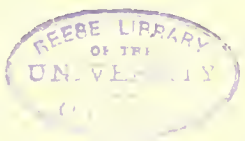
M. made haſt awaye, and ſaied ſhe durſt not tarry any longer.

Heare was good M., good M., and a great deale more. God confounde me, God confounde me, if thowe wantes, while I haue, &c.

Milord, ſeeing it would not be that time, deſirid

her that ſhe would appoint ſum other day, when he might talk longer with her, and haue his requeſt, proteſting vnto her that he would be true vnto her, and vſe her as his wife, and haue to dooe with no other, but only her and his wife. And ſwearing that ſhe ſhould haue any thing he had at commaundiment, and vſe him as familiarly and bowldly at any time as her owne brother; with a many ſutch goodly ſupplicamuſſis; beſides that he put his hand into his pockit, and pullid owt at a venture ſutch moony, as ether he had put there for ŷ nonſe or as cam next to hande, which he would needs make ŷ maide fingar whether ſhe would or noe. The maide tould him ſhe had deſeruid no ſutch giftes at his hands, nor none would take; ſhe had, ſhe thankid God, enough to ſerue her tarne, and needid to take none in that ſort, and ſo would needs begon.

Milord ſwore ſhe ſhould not chooſe but take it. (It was iuſt 13*s.* in testers and ſhillings.) The maide ſeeing him ſo erneſt, and being verie deſirous to be gon, tooke ŷ monye, and at ŷ lenght, with much adooe (only, as ſhe ſaied, to be rid of him at that time), prommiſid to meete with him there againe on Sunday next, which was ŷ next day to Chriſtmas. This Sunday was a maruelous wet day, and ſuddainly there aroſe great waters, by reaſon of ŷ raine and ſnowe, that fill togither.



Notwithſtandinge, ŷ maide purpoſely tooke a iorny a ſeuen miles of, in ŷ morning before ſix a clocke, dreading ŷ wurſt if mie lord ſhould chaunce to cum. The raine continued ŷ whole day, and yet P. in ŷ euening cam to ŷ place appointid (he was fajnt to cum on pattins, bycauſe of ŷ great wett), thinking verely to haue ŷ maide there. It was tould him the maide was gon to a frendes of hers this Chriſtmas, to make merrie. But they thought ſhe would be here again by Neweyeares time. And this was all ŷ newes P. had to his maſter.

The Thurſday before Neweyeares day (being on ŷ Satterday), the maide, by counſell of on ſhe truſtid well, exçuſid herſelf on this wiſe to Milord :—

Milord I thanke you hartely
For your late liberalitie;
I would I were hable to requite
Your lordſhips bowntie with ŷ like.
Marry, mie hart is not ſo franke
But mie habilitie is as ſcante;
Therefore, in ſteade of a leifer gift,
I bequeath you this paper for a ſhift.
You ſe I am diſpoſid to rime,
Though it be cleen out of time.
I hope your L. will haue me excuſid
As longe as you feel not yourſelf abuſid.

To be ſhort, Milord, thus it is, Iwis,
I could not be at home according to prommis.
I would not, perhaps it may to you ſeem ;
I pray you, Milord, do not ſo miſdeem.
Truly I was ſent for to ſpend this good time
A fewe miles of with a kinſman of mine.
Whether mi father in haſt wuld ſo faine haue
me goe,
That I could not nor durſt not for mielife ſay
noe.

So that I was faint
At his commaundiment
To take a iornye
That I litle ment.
I pray you, Milord,
Haue me excuſid,
Though by mie frends
I be thus rulid.

The truth is, I am not mine owne maide,
My frends to diſobey I am afraide.
An other time as good
To ſpeake your minde ;
In ſ̄ meane time if you ſeeke
You can not but finde.
Your honors to commaund
In anie honeſt demaund.
M.

Milord, if you will any thing with me, ether concerning your letters (for your man telles me you looke for them againe), or concerning mie breaking prommis with you, or your next ſpeaking with me, or anie thing els that ſhall ſeem good to your L., you may ſafely, I warrant you, write your minde, and ſend your letters by P. to ŷ pore womans you wot of, to be broute me on Friday next in ŷ morning by on that cannot reade himſelf, and that I will charg to bring me in his purſe ſutch a letter that I had forgott in ſutch a place; which to be ſuer I will ſay I wrote to be ſent mie brother of Cambridg concerning his cumming downe into ŷ cuntrie, the day before he cam downe of his owne accord vnſentfor.

And therefore I take it not amis, Milord, you ſeale your letter, and write thus in ŷ backſide, in a ſmall raggid ſecretary hand,—

To mie louing brother, Mr. G. H., on of ŷ fellowes of Pembrook hall, in Cambridg. As I vſe to write to mie brother there, when I write vnto him, that if ŷ ſimple fellowe chaunce to offer me ŷ letter before cumpany, I may ſay it was a letter I had writt to be ſent my brother Gabriell at ſutch time as he cam home to mie fathers, and ſo kept it ſtill, and by chaunce left it in ſutch a place, and therefore ſent nowe for it, being loth it ſhould cum in any others hands. Thus,

Milord, in mie fooliſh fanſie you may wri'e moſt ſafely, an you be diſpoſid to write. Marry, I pray do as it ſhall ſeeme beſt to your L. If you write I will anſwer you ether by pen or tunge, as ſhortly as may be.

Thus ons againe I take mie leaue of your L., hauing no other new yeares gift, but this ſillie ſheete of paper to beſtowe vppon you. And ſo I wiſh you many a good newe yeare.

Which letter mielord anſwerid præſently vppon ŷ deliuerie thereof, ſo that ŷ bearer was deſirid to tarry awhile and take an anſwer with him, which he did.

The anſwer was ſuperſcribid thus, in a ſmall counterfet ſecretary,—

To my louing brother,
M^r^. Gabriell Haruey,
Fellowe of Pembrook
Hall in Cambridg.

And ŷ letter itſelf was as followith.

The letter was mett withall by ŷ waye, where-vppon this letter was addreſſid to Milord :—

Milord, it was mie hap on new yeares euen, as I was riding towards Cambridg, to ouertake by ŷ way a cuntrie fellowe that I had ofttimes ſeen long ſince at mie fathers here in Walden. The plain fellowe amongſt amanie other goodly matters tould me he had a letter in his pocket, that ſhould

ons haue bene ſent me to Cambridg, but that I cam home to miefathers that verie time it ſhould haue bene ſent me. I pray the, ſaid I, from whome? I warrant you, ſyr, quoth ȳ fellowe, from on that loouith you full well, your ſiſter Marcie. And her letters, ſaid I, ar ſumwhat daintie, they cum ſo ſildom. But I prythe lett me ſee ȳ letter, for, being written to me, as thou ſaiſt it was, there can be nothing in it that I may not knowe of. Indede, ſyr, quoth he, who ſhould ſee it, if you might not ſee it? But by ȳ Marie-god I was ſtraitly chargid by mie yung miſtres, that noboddie, in anie caſe, ſhould ſee it. Whie, foole, ſaid I, I am nobodie, thouh I ſee it, thou maiſt ſay, and vowe too, if need be, nobodie hath ſeen it. You ſchollars be merrie gentlemen, quoth ȳ fellowe; but ſeing you will needs ſee it, you ſhall ſee it indeed for me, a Gods name, and with that he put his hand in his purſe, and gaue me ȳ letter to peruſe. I ſa[w]e it ſuperſcribid to me jndeed, and therefore made nothing daintie at ȳ matter, but broke it vp. At ȳ verie greating, to tell you ȳ troth, Milord, I was ſumdealeabaſſhid, but more aſtonied at ȳ proceſſe, and finally, moſt of all, moouid at ȳ ſubſcription. The greeting was, Mine owne ſweet Mercy, as if it had bene addreſſid to mie ſiſter from ſum loouer of hers, and not ſcriblid from mie ſiſter to a brother of

hers. The proceſſe, a verie amorous and gloſing diſcours touching her ſuddain departure, her ſpeedie return, ŷ want of her præſens, ŷ pleaſure taken in reading her letters, ŷ poſſeſſion of her according to prommis, with a menie goodlie faier words of allurement and perſuaſion to that effect. The ſubſcription was in your lordſhips owne name, as I remember me, thus,—

Thine more then his owne,

PHIL.

Meethouht, Milord, this was wunderfull ſtraung geare, and full mutch adooe had I (God wot) to diſſemble mie ſuddain fanſies, and comprimitt mie jnward paſſions. Notwithſtanding I ſett as good a countenaunce on ŷ matter as I miht. And I prey the, what haue we here beſide (an God will) in this prettie paper? ſaid I to ŷ fellowe. Marry, ſyr, I wud it were an ould angell for me, quoth he. Na then, for me, ſaid I; but I feare me, when all is dun, it will rather prooue ſum crackd grote in ŷ opening; take it thou for a teſter at all auenture. Not ſo, Maſter, quoth he, Ile none of ŷ pig in ŷ poke, I thanke you. Well, then, Ile vnpoke ŷ pig for this ons ſaid I; and before ŷ fellowe, contrarie to mi exſpectation, found there a Gods name a faier Ingliſh crowne, appointid as ſhould appear for a neweyeares gift. The pore

fellowe lauhid out, and aſkid me what I had gottin, if I had gon thorouh with him aforehand. I tould him I ſhould haue bene faint to haue made ſum backreckning with him again. And ſo, to be ſhort, I bore the ſillie fellow in hand I would eaſe him of that burdin, both ŷ letter and tokin too, being ſent to me as they were. Na, by ŷ Mariegod, ſyr, quoth he, I would not for ŷ beſt coate to mie back you ſhuld ſerue me ſo. Your ſiſter, I dare ſweare, wuld truſt me ŷ wurs as long as ſhe ſhould knowe me. I pray ye nowe giue me them again, and if it be in her mind you ſhall haue them, you may better haue them at her hands then at mine. Thou ſaiſt troth indeed, quoth I, and ſeeing thou wilt needs purſe them vp again, take them here with the for me, and mutchie god-ditch her good hart with them. But I prey the haue me commendid to her, and tell her, I am a ſtorer of hers for a twoe or thre crackd grotes and bowd teſterns, but ŷ deuill a crowne of gould of hers I could fingar before, and now an God will muſt I part with it tooe. And for a tokin, will her in my name to looke ere ſhe leape. She maie pick out ŷ Ingliſh of it herſelf.

And this be all, God be wye, M. Haruey, ſaid ŷ pore honeſt fellowe, I ſhall do your commaundiment, an God will within this fewe howers.

Thus it was mie hap, Milord, by a meere

chaunce, to liht on ſutch a letter and tokin, ſent, not from you, as I take it, but in your L. name, from I knowe not whome, to a ſiſter of mine. Wherevppon I was ſumwhat ſtraungly affectid on ŷ ſuddaine, muſing greatly whoe this luſtie ſuter ſhould be, and what ſhould be ment by ŷ loftie ſubſcription within, and ŷ ſuttle ſuperſcription withoute. In ſo mutch that I was now fully reſoluid at mie returne, which ſhould be ŷ next day, to make ſum arrand to mie ſiſter by ŷ way, being ſo little way off, and ſo to boult out ŷ matter. The next morning, contrarie to mie ouernights forecaſt, it was mie ill-lucke to ſtumble on ſutch cumpany to Walden warde, that I could not poſſibely cumpas mie purpoſe, vnles I would haue lingerid a day or twoe longer in Cambridg for ŷ nonſe, which I could not nether conueniently do, mie buſines lying as it did. So that I was faint nowe to quiet mieſelf, as well as I miht, and, ſeeing this would not fadg, to do an other. I thowht beſt to ſpur cutt and make ŷ more ſpeede, that as ſoone as I cam at Waldin, I miht huddle vp a word or twoe to mi ſiſter by ſum of ŷ markit folks. (folios 71-84).

GLOSSARIAL-INDEX,

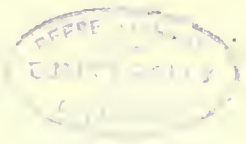
WITH

NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS,

BY THE EDITOR.

NOTE.

In this Glossarial-Index an effort has been made to include every word used by Harvey in any way noticeable, though in frequently occurring words only selected examples and references are given. Trite classical names—persons and things—are not recorded; neither has it been deemed expedient to annotate historical-literary names that have long become commonplaces. Harvey revelled in his out-of-the-way reading of Greek and Latin authors, and it would have demanded volumes to verify and elucidate these. Commonly the name is all, so that to follow them up would really not illustrate the text. Probably some may think that my error has been in excess rather than the opposite. Taken along with Greene and Nashe and Dekker, this Glossarial-Index will be found to supply virgin materials for the history of words and phrases in our language. Their vocabularies are extremely remarkable, and must be conjoined: *e.g.*, Nashe quotes so much from Harvey and Harvey from Nashe that it is only by reference and re-reference from one to the other that their meaning will be arrived at. Be it noted that the order of the words is not strictly alphabetical, except as regards the first two letters—*e.g.*, Ba, be, bi, onward. I owe very special thanks to my good friend Dr. Brinsley Nicholson, London, for his painstaking helpfulness in reading the MS. of the present Glossarial-Index. His familiarity with earlier and later English literature has greatly enriched it. A. B. G.



GLOSSARIAL-INDEX,

WITH

NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

A.

A *per se* A, i. 84, 202 ; ii. 317. This was the mode (as is said) of declaring A or the other vowels to be a separate syllable; or in naming the capital letters of the alphabet in the Chrisse-cross row of the Horn-book. The earliest use of the phrase is in Chaucer, who describes Cresseide as "the flowre and *a per se* of Troie and Grece" = by herself, or pre-eminent loveliness. See Nares, *s.v.*, for various examples. Shakespeare illustrates it (*Troilus and Cress.* i. 2):

> "They say he is *a* very man *per se*,
> And stands alone."

A, to the Arches, ii. 208—probably only an absurd jocosity answering to that which follows of not knowing B from Battledore; but it is to be noted that there was a prison belonging to the Court of Arches.

Abate, an ace, ii. 63—primary meaning was 'take somewhat off from,' here = cast me down or take down my conceit.

Abstemio, the Italian, i. 21.

Abhominable = abominable, ii. 65, 111. Shakespeare plays on the erroneous pedantry that derived the word from *ab homine* instead of from *abominor*: "This is *abhominable* which he would call *abominable*" (*Love's Labour's Lost*, v. 1). See Nares, *s.v.*, and Glossarial-Index to our Dekker in the *Huth Library*, *s.v.*

Abhominably = abominably, i. 73, 190, 192; iii. 37.

Abominationally, ii. 276.

Abroche, i. 243 = set a-flowing.

Abjects, ii. 33 = degraded, contemptible persons: "Yea, the very *abjects* came against me unawares" (Psalm xxxv. 15, Book of Common Prayer).

Abjectest, ii. 292 = most despicable.

Abjected, ii. 159 = cast down.

Abjecteth, ii. 267 = casteth down.

Absurd, ii. 101.

Absurdifying, ii. 276 = ridiculing or making ridiculous.

Absolon, Master, ii. 128.

Absonism, ii. 275—from *absonus*—probably = discord. But see Nashe's Glossarial-Index, *s.v.*

Accloyed, i. 169, 222, 269; ii. 218, 268—compound of 'ad' and 'cloyed.'

Acquitteth, i. 172 = requiteth. "The palme or cypresse should his paines *acquite*" (Carew's *Tasso*, in Dr. Grosart's *Occasional Issues*).

Acheerith, i. 212—Harvey here uses an 'a' or 'make' form = makes cheer [to], or uses the 'a' as = 'ad.'

Accrew, i. 222 = join myself to—still used as 'accrue.'
Accord, i. 247, 293 = agree to, be in harmony.
Achates, ii. 284 = the agate, under which was included bloodstone, etc. A curious use of this word is found as = staunch friend, in the memorial-stone to Sir John de Græme in Falkirk parish churchyard, where he is described as Wallace's 'Achates.'
Accleere, ii. 289, 324 = clear. See under 'Acheerith.'
Actor, dog excellent, iii. 56-7.
Addresse = redress? i. 185: or address myself to?
Addressid her, iii. 81.
Adamant, clawe of, ii. 236 = sharp cutting edge of a diamond—such as in the glazier's well-known tool.
Addoulce, i. 247 = make sweet.
Addread, i. 251, 295 = make dread for.
Aduizement = advice, i. 6, 39.
Aduertizement, i. 75 = notice.
Adulterate, i. 261 = adulterated, corrupted; or it might be used adjectivally.
Adiaphorall, ii. 157 = unimportant (*αδιαφορος*).
Adling, gabbing (Chaucer), ii. 311 (see context).
Adiectiue, iii. 25.
Aeger = eager, or perhaps 'sour,' ii. 112, 189, 284.
Aërius = Arius, ii. 155, 157.
Aegle = eagle, ii. 251, 252.
Aferde = afraid, iii. 82.
Affect, i. 173, 179, 248; ii. 14, 176 = set affection on, like.
Affectionate, i. 43 = passionate. See context, and specially ll. 14-15.

After-claps, iii. 18 = after-strokes or ill consequences —hence a certain disease is called a 'clap.'

Agarick, i. 260 = a purger, and, as it somewhat brings on vomiting, it is corrected by adding ginger (J. Parkinson).

Agast = aghast, i. 41.

Agrippa, i. 127.

Agogg, ii. 92, 131.

Aihme = ah me ! i. 238.

Aier, M., ii. 209.

Allin ringe, i. 43—seemingly error for 'All in,' the common phrase for such ringing.

Alchimists, ii. 251.

Alchimisticall, ii. 207.

Allgates, i. 44 = by all means.

Ale-crammed, nose, i. 201 = red and swollen from drink.

Ale-house dagger, i. 241—daggers so called because they were used on the slightest provocation by cutting huff-snuffes in alehouses. Cf. *Romeo and Juliet*, III., i., l. 5, etc.

Ale-house index, iii. 29 = index or commonplace book of gathered alehouse terms.

Alciat, i. 241.

Alltopeesis = all to pieces, iii. 82.

Allectiue—from *allicio, allectus* = alluring, enticing—i. 249 ; ii. 319.

All well, etc., i. 294.

All-onely, ii. 49 = the only one of all, the chief and therefore above the rest.

All-to-be-assed, ii. 80 = the all (or thoroughly) to be considered an ass—qy. Laurentius Valla ?

All to be spiced, iii. 85 = altogether, entirely.

Allocer, Duke, ii. 92.

Alcoran, ii. 148 = the Koran, or Quhoran.

Aliably = to be allied or related to, ii. 147.

Alphes rabi, ii. 170.

All-hart, ii. 195 = great-hearted?

Allusions, iii. 36.

Alas, iii. 48, 63 = an interjection not, as now, necessarily sorrowful or lamenting.

Alce, iii. 54—a fabulous and over-great deer, said to have had no joints in his legs; otherwise, says Batman, "the Aethiopian bull or the right elk" (b. 17, addition to c. 6). He would identify it with the "chamois" of Auth. Version (Deuteronomy xiv. 5).

Amountes, i. 119, 165, 217, 218, 227; ii. 7, 62, 153 197, 257 = mounts—the prefix 'a' to be noted here, as elsewhere, by the Shakespeare student.

Amplifieng, i. 200.

Ambidexteritie, ii. 172, 199 = versatility. So in *Tristram Shandy*, iii. 23, "Without any of that speculative subtility or *ambidexterity* of argument."

Amphitryos, two, ii. 250. Zeus, having assumed the form of the absent Amphitryon, Alcmene bore to him Heracles. Plautus dramatised this in the *Menæchmei*. *En passant*, Mendechmi, ii. 250, is an error for Menæchmei.

Angeles, red-headed, i. 69, 184—'angels' were gold coins so called, and 'gold' is always described as 'red' ('red monie' of the ballads); which is to be kept in mind when applied to hair, *e.g.*,

Queen Elizabeth's, a lock of which preserved since Sidney at Wilton, is to-day sparkling and golden—exquisite hair. In iii. 95 the mention of 'ould angels' before, and more especially its use here, seems to imply that the old angel was of greater value than the new one: but query was it so?

Angel, white, i. 268—angels usually so conceived from Holy Scripture narratives. See Daniel vii. 9, 2 Chronicles v. 12, and the narratives of the Resurrection, etc.

Angelica, i. 285 = a medicinal plant. See Gerard, p. 147, as quoted by Nares, *s.v.*—a supposed cure for Plague.

Angelical, ii. 119.

Andrewes, Bp., ii. 15, 292—a fellow-student with Spenser and Harvey at Cambridge.

Antonio, Don, ii. 15.

Antoninus, Marcus, ii. 58.

Analogy, ii. 140.

Analogicall, iii. 7.

Anarchie, ii. 159.

Anoke, John, a-Stile, ii. 126—usually John a Nokes or John-a-Noakes. See Nares, *s.v.*, for curious illustrations from John Taylor and Copley.

Antick, ii. 221.

Apishe, i. 168.

Ape, i. 189 = imitator.

Apes clogg, ii. 132, 224—from the second use 'ape' seems to mean one who mows and mouths at the passers by = a puny or vile satirist. The 'clogg' may mean, one who so sticks to the

press as to 'clog' it or prevent its use by more worthy persons.

Ape-dubbers, i. 234 = nick-namers.

Appeach, i. 251; ii. 270 = impeach, accuse.

Appeachment, ii. 192. See 'Appeach.'

Apis, M. Lapis, ii. 322—Christopher *Beeston* was a player and afterwards a master of a Company of Boy-players. His brother William was a man of some authority on matters of poetry. See Collier's *History of the Stage*, vol. ii., p. 81, note.

Apistie, ii. 311 (*απιστος*) = want of belief—Harvey's manufactured variant for incredulity. What Dion he meant the Editor can't tell.

Apologies = defences, ii. 6.

Apuleius, yong, ii. 39, 52, 119 = Thomas Nashe.—Apuleius in his best known work "The Golden Ass" was a satirist, and so might well be used by Harvey to discredit his antagonist, especially as 'ass' is his favourite term for him, as a pun on 'Nashe' and 'Ass.'

Apollo, Orus, ii. 57 = *Ὡρος* or Horus; the Egyptian sun-god was identified by the Greeks and Romans with Apollo, and as such worshipped by many.

Apostataes, ii. 168, 184—the transition-form of 'apostate.' See Herrick's Works, by Dr. Grosart, ii. 15, Nicholson's *Acolastus* (1600), and Dyce's *Shirley*, p. 146. Also consult Nares, *s.v.*

Apron, short, ii. 187, 220—artizans wearing these in opposition to the long-gowned lawyers, etc. In the second reference it is the '*hangman's* apron.'

Appliably = applicably, ii. 202, 298.
Appliant, ii. 267.
Apothegs = apothegms, ii. 262, 309.
Apprentishood, ii. 277.
Aquafortis, i. 214, 216, 281; ii. 228, 232 *et freq.*— Nashe's words are "tearmes . . . laid in steepe in *aqua fortis* and gunpowder" = nitric acid.
Arithmetericians, i. 124—a pedantically foolish change formed from *αριθμητος*.
Aretino, i. 125, 201, 272; ii. 54, 55, 272, *et freq.*
Aristippi, i. 136 = lovers of pleasure, as that was the character given to the philosopher Aristippus and his son.
Arch-athiest, i. 190.
„ deserved, i. 190.
„ woonderments, ii. 67.
„ expectation, ii. 67.
„ asses, ii. 260.
„ excellent, ii. 284.
„ patrons, ii. 287.
„ deserve, ii. 299.
„ mistery, ii. 63. *** It is to be noted that Harvey was fond of the prefix 'arch.'
Arcadia, i. 191.
„ Greene's, ii. 254.
Areopage, ii. 186 = Areopagus.
Artique, high Pole, i. 201.
Artificiality, i. 218; ii. 118, 278 = art making, or making by rules of art.
Artificially, i. 208; ii. 19, 247, 258, 275, 276.
Arreared, i. 212, 217, 290; ii. 117, 285 = properly made to rear or raise up; but sometimes passing

rather—as words in 'a' are apt to do—into the simple sense of reared or raised up.

Arrand, iii. 97.

Arrant, i. 242, 249 = errant, wandering. But as Halliwell-Phillipps thinks, both words convey a sense of something objectionable or worthless, from the character of 'errands' and 'errants' generally.

Arrantest, ii. 39.

Articles of Accorde, i. 259 = of agreement.

Articles, ii. 111.

Ariosto, English, i. 266. Who?

Arte Notory, ii. 64—the form of 'P. Penniless,' a supplication or letter to the Devil, seems to suggest that this term was = the art of writing a note which shall equal that of 'P. Super.'

Armada, ii. 96.

Argonauticall, ii. 105.

Arread, ii. 116—Harvey uses 'read' twice previously in same page, and this word is used to mean either make to read or *read to*, the 'a' and the 'ad' prefixes being, as before, apparently confused.

Aristocraty, ii. 153. Milton so spelled, and nearer the Greek *αριστοκρατια*.

Armour of Proofe, ii. 157—usually equal armour, proof against weapons; and hence Harvey characteristically uses it in his punning fashion as = the defence composed of proofs.

Artisan gouernements, ii. 194—Harvey the plebeian had serene contempt for the 'common people.'

Armin, Robert, ii. 280, 281. See his collected writings in Dr. Grosart's *Occasional Issues*.

Architectours, iii. 70.

Ascham, i. 22, 23, 75, 101, 103, 241, 266; ii. 50, 67, 96, 241, 246—the renowned 'Scholemaster.'

Asse, i. 234; ii. 247, 249, 250, 251, 253, 254, 256.

Asse in mouth, ii. 40—the whole paragraph is clearly ironical; and this is one of Harvey's happy-thoughts (!) and frequent equivoques on *an asse* and Nashe, on the principle of a nuncle, etc.

Asseth, ii. 107 = maketh out an ass.

Assessinge, i. 135—another egregious pun not = imposing a tax, albeit the latter yields an excellent meaning.

Assefied, ii. 52.

Astrologicall, discourse, i. 199.

Assecure, ii. 10, 152 = make themselves secure. So Samuel Daniel (*Civil Wars*, iv. 9)—

> "And so hath Henrie assecur'd that side."

Aspen = trembling, ii. 17.

Asteley, Iohn, ii. 99. Sir John Astley (or Ashley) was made Master of the Revels. Query at ii. 266, Achelly? Doubtful.

Ascertained, i. 294; ii. 234—Harvey uses 'are . . . of' instead of our 'have,' but the phrase agrees with its etymology = you that are not made certain of. 'I dare ascertaine you' would be a jocular pun; also used = make or made certain, *i.e.*, as stronger than our use of ascertain.

Assery, ii. 245.

Astrophill = Sidney, ii. 254.

Aship, ii. 262.

Attone, ii. 13 = make one. See 'Attonement.'

Attonement, i. 248, 285; ii. 327.

Ataxie, ii. 159 (*αταξια*)= want of discipline, confusion.
At-first, at-last, ii. 247.
Attend, ii. 318 = wait on, or about to be.
Autentique, autenticall, autentically, i. 22, 62, 77, 85, 133, 195.
Austria, i. 264.
Autors, authore, i. 157, 161, 189, 199; ii. 134.
Autem, i. 281—a would-be jocular pun = but, therefore taken as butt, the butt of his nose. See context.
Autority, ii. 10.
Auayllablest, ii. 107.
Audry, S., ii. 235.
Awatering, ii. 13.
Awke, ii. 63, 221—Prompt. Parv. gives "*Awke* or angry. *Contrarius, bilosus, perversus. Auke* or wrong. *Sinister.*" It would seem to have meant originally left-handed. Here = awkward or perverse.

B.

B to a battledore, ii. 208. "Battledoor was properly the name for a horn-book from which children learnt the alphabet" (Halliwell-Phillipps and Wright's Nares, *s.v.*)
Babilonian, i. 290.
Babingtons, i. 193.
Babies, i. 205, 225, 283; ii. 7 = dolls, trifles.
Bacchanal, ii. 271.
Bace = base, iii. 31.
Bachelers hood, i. 200.
Bacon, Sir Nicholas, i. 246.

Back-friends, ii. 210, 314 = an apparent friend, though really an enemy. Minsheu gives it, *s.v.*, 'inimico' as a synonym without such distinction.

Back-church, ii. 210.

Backreckning, iii. 96.

Baddest, ii. 109, 293—an obsolete superlative worth revival.

Bag-pudding, ii. 116 = a roly-poly pudding, or magnified sausage, which was boiled in a (linen) bag. See Nares, *s.v.*, for full note and quaint examples, earlier and later.

Bagpipe, ii. 254—context shows that it was = dulcimer.

Baggage, ii. 273—probably worthless.

Baityng, i. 26.

Baker, Mat, ii. 289.

Balductum . . . ballet [ballad], i. 62, 75; ii. 221—Balducta is a mediæval Latin word, meaning buttermilk, but 'balductum' was used apparently in a burlesque sense for a paltry affected writer, and also for his compositions. See Nares, *s.v.*, as above.

Bald, i. 190; balde, i. 67—in the latter 'bald' may be, as Cath. Angl. gives it = *audax* [over-bold], but the former shows that it is a metaphorical use of 'bald,' *calvus*, in the sense of 'wanting or poor,' much as we speak of a 'bald version or translation' as against a free or idiomatic one.

Ball, cuttinge, i. 169 = swaggering or ruffling, like either a gallant or a swashbuckler. Nares says also that the term 'cutter' was applied to a cut-purse; sister (Ball), *ibid.*

Ball, game of, iii. 60.

Ballats, i. 201 ; ballet-makers, iii. 67.

Balke, ii. 175 = mound or ridge.

Band, i. 248 = bond.

Bancroft, ii. 49, 216.

Banging, ii. 276 = knocking with blows.

Bankrout, ii. 283 = bankrupt—"Time is a very *bankrout*" (*Comedy of Errors* iv. 2).

Bankes horse, iii. 52—see a full account by Rimbault in his Percy Society reprint of *Maroccus Extaticus*, wherein will be found notes of many writers who mention Bankes and his horse. Raleigh even introduced them into his *History of the World*. Cf. Nares, *s.v.*

Barbers, iii. 17 onward ; barber-chirurgeons—in a humble way 'barbers' were surgeons, tooth-drawers, blood-letters mainly, unless (1540) qualified as barber-surgeons. The two were not disconnected till 1745.

Barnewell, ii. 302.

Barratours, ii. 163, 164, 191 = wrangling, contentious, troublesome fellows.

Barnes, Barnabe, ii. 5—his Poems were first collected in Dr. Grosart's *Occasional Issues*, 2 vols. 4to.

Bartholomewe fair, i. 113.

Barthol, i. 208.

Bartas, Du, i. 266; ii. 21, 101, 103—Sylvester's chief work is a paraphrase-translation of this once eminent French poet. See his complete Works in *Chertsey Worthies Library*, 2 vols. 4to.

Barrel (verb), iii. 29.

Barrainer, ii. 14—obsolete comparative.

Barrow, Henry, ii. 133, 146, 167, 170, 176, 294—see life of him in Leslie Stephen's *National Biography*, *s.n.*

Baro, Dr. Peter, ii. 83.

Baskeruile, ii. 15.

Bassa = bashaw—*i.e.* pacha or pasha, i. 295.

Bawdery, ii. 251.

Bawe-wawe = bow-wow (as a dog), ii. 273.

Bayarde = brown or bay horse, i. 67, 161; ii. 82, 237, 311—the epithet 'blind' so constantly used by authors, shows that allusion was intended to some particular horse so called, what or whose seems unknown.

Bocum, iii. 86.

Betake, i. 33, 120 = commend—*i.e.* deliver or commit (you) to.

Behappened, i. 42 = happened. Cf. prefix 'be' with 'a.'

Beetleheaded = wooden or stupid, 'beetle' being the rammer, mallet, etc., so called.

Beck, i. 84 = bend in salutation. Cf. *Timon of Athens*, "Serving of *becks* and jutting out of bums" (i. 2).

Beamy, i. 243 = beaming.

Bearnes = bairns—*i.e.* children, i. 87.

Behoovefull, i. 130 = necessary, useful, fit.

Beholdingnesse, ii. 294, "Upbraids our fortunes with *beholdingnesse*" (Marston's *Malcontent*).

Beholdinge, i. 215; ii. 6, 188, 220; iii. 44 = obliged or indebted—*i.e.*, held under obligation.

Beshrowe, i. 113 = wish ill to, curse (in a modified sense)—because the bite of the shrew (mouse) was considered venomous.

Bestead, i. 222 = circumstanced.
Bellwether, Blacke, i. 223; ii. 273 = leader (of the flock).
Bee, i. 259; ii. 233.
Beaudesert, i. 290; ii. 264, 321 = good desert.
Beuis, Syr, ii. 18, 225.
Bell, geeue the, ii. 51.
Beshrewe, ii. 56. See under 'Beshrowe.'
Beclaweth, ii. 80 = flattereth. To 'claw' or scratch or tickle, and hence 'flatter.'
Berlady, ii. 89 = by our Lady, *i.e.* Virgin Mary.
Beluedere, ii. 193 (Ital.) = an elevated place (or house or garden) whence one obtains a good view.
Belly-biters, ii. 210—a vile meaning.
Benet and Collect, ii. 322—by. grace or blessing? Du Cange has Benitus = *benedictus*: Fr. *beni*[*t*].
Bewaileful, i. 195 = full of bewailing or lamentation.
Bewitched, iii. 13 = so drew me admiringly, or the like.
Beare, iii. 21.
Beard, Nashe none, iii. 38.
Beggar-stuff, ii. 61.
Beuer = beaver, iii. 40.
Bibiena, Cardinal, i. 125.
Bilchaunger, George, i. 79.
Bird, Christopher, i. 160, 176, 238; ii. 74, 83.
Bisonian, i. 208 (Italian) = a needy fellow, and hence a knave or scoundrel.
Bizzaro, ii. 99.
Bishopgate, ii. 198.
Bishops, superintendents, ii. 155.

Biggin, ii. 220 = house or residence, as Scoticè. Or query = covering (or close cap), a child's or lawyer's cap? See Nares, *s.v.*

Bibber, ii. 238.

Bibbing, ii. 273.

Bibble babble, iii. 30 = nonsensical talk.

Blabbe, ii. 228.

Black prince, i. 216 = the Devil.

Blacke swanne, i. 220—common enough now that Australia has been opened.

Blacke art, i. 244 = necromancy usually.

Blackamore, ii. 127—a 'negro' was originally understood by the English black-a-more, but it must be noted that the 'negro' and 'Moor' were distinct, and so held in Elizabethan times: *e.g.*, when the races of men were represented in a Show, there appeared the 'Black Man' and also the 'Moor' [brown].

Blason, i. 267, ii. 6 = paint out in true colours (heraldic technical).

Blustrous, ii. 17.

Blundeuil, Thomas, ii. 99.

Blithely, ii. 113.

Bladude, ii. 117—seemingly some personage of a romance. Query—did not Swift use it as a town's name?

Blase, S. = S. Blaise, ii. 235.

Blindfolded petie god, i. 81. See page 36.

Blurt, ii. 273.

Bloudes, ii. 339.

Blue = blew, iii. 77.

Bonets, i. 82.

Booke-case, ii. 36.
Books, Italian and other, i. 137; at Cambridge, i. 137-8.
Bookishe, i. 147.
Bodie, of God, iii. 78 = by the Mass? (as p. 79).
Bodin, i. 146, 252; ii. 23, 24, 84.
Botcher, i. 190 = bungler, not 'butcher.'
Botched up = clumsily and badly done, i. 194.
Bombard-goblin, ii. 17 = a goblin that bombards one with full and explosive terms. He afterwards calls him an 'elfe' and of gunpowder. There may be also allusion to his drinking propensities.
Bombardier, i. 205; ii. 41 = a thrower of terms like bombs at his enemy.
Bombardaccio, Sir, ii. 18.
Bobb, for a K, i. 282; dry bobbers, ii. 212, 223 = scoff, taunt, primarily a blow or stroke.
Bobbes, ii. 133.
Bonnie, i. 283.
Bombasted, i. 290; ii. 237 = stuffed out.
Bodley, ii. 15.
Bounsing, ii. 63 = jumping—so frightening?
Borrowghes, ii. 97.
Bourde, ii. 295 = jest or attack, the simile being nautical, as in *Twelfth Night* i. 3.
Bourdeth, ii. 107, 167—so this = jesteth.
Boord = dinner-time, iii. 66.
Boulteth out, ii. 145 = sifteth out.
Boult = sift, iii. 97.
Bonifacius, ii. 228.
Bons = bones, iii. 70.

Bordello, ii. 233 = brothel—"crept into all the stewes, all the brothell-houses and *burdelloes* of Italy" (Coryat's *Crudities*).
Bourne, William, ii. 289.
Bowgets = budgets, i. 50.
British Museum, i. 2.
Brauure, ii. 222 = bravery, splendour.
Braueryes, i. 137; ii. 21—*ibid.*
Brauinge, i. 168, 271 = defying.
Breake day, ii. 60 = fail to keep his appointment. Cf. context.
Breake the square, i. 157 = to break this rule or depart from my settled order: so "all squares."
Breake-necke, i. 268 = its own gallows.
Braine, ii. 17.
Braggardous, ii. 17.
Broaching, ii. 23 = piercing through so as to set a-flowing—a 'broche' is a spit.
Brucke = brook, endure, ii. 38, 236.
Brothers, sworne, ii. 77.
Broccage, ii. 92, 121 = brokage or intervention as a broker.
Browne, Robert, ii. 133, 167, 169, 176, 294—see life in Stephen's "National Biography," *s.n.*
Brothellish, ii. 214.
Brayeth, ii. 239.
Broking, ii. 270.
Brabling, ii. 270.
Breath, stinking, iii. 21-3—apparently, like 'stinking feet,' more common in Elizabethan times than now.
Breeches, story of a pair of, iii. 26, 27.

Brust = burst, i. 45; iii. 85, *et frequenter.*

Brute = bruit, ii. 18.

Buchanan, George, i. 218.

Bunglid, i. 112.

Busbye, Dr., i. 128.

Bugges, i. 297; ii. 18, 163, 317, 346 = bugbears. An English Bible is known as the 'bug' Bible, from a notorious use of the word in translating one of the Psalms.

Bugges-woordes, i. 166, 214; ii. 233 = terrifying words.

Buglosse, i. 294 = a plant, or some preparation of a plant, but what 'Mercury of Bugloss' was the Editor knoweth not. See Britten, *s.v.*

Bull-beare, i. 184, 296; ii. 17, 287—query same as 'bull-begger'? (which see), or = similar to bug-bear?

Bull-beggar, i. 204, 281, 296; ii. 129, 323—a kind of hobgoblin. See Nares, *s.v.*, for a full Note with examples.

Bull-woorke = bulwark, iii. 321.

Bull-heade, iii. 21.

Bursten = burst, i. 193.

Buckram giants, i. 204, 205—'buckram' was a stiff material, and by this phrase Harvey probably meant giants made of buckram—*i.e.*, with nothing inside their suits—foolish scarecrows, or feigned frighteners. Hence, probably, Shakespeare, by an intentional equivoke, made Falstaff dress his opponents in buckram suits. Legally 'buckram bags' were the lowest class of attorneys.

Busy idlenesse, i. 213.

Busyheads, i. 215.

Buttry, sprite of the, ii. 51—some variant of 'Puck.' Cf. 'Aiken Drum' of Scotland.

Bunge, ii. 51, 223 = stop up, as does the 'bung' of a hogshead; 'bung up,' ii. 128.

Bumbasted, ii. 61 = stuffed out.

Budget, ii. 75, 220 = bag, or valise, etc., that held his odds and ends.

Bugiale, ii. 215.

Bumme-carde, ii. 215 = a card used by sharpers for cutting, but whether it was long or wide or a 'last' card, Editor knoweth not. Query—cutting with view of getting particular card at 'bottom?'

Bumm, ii. 273.

Bumbarde, ii. 211 = a 'chamber,' or small mortar, also a hand-gun.

Butter-whore, ii. 230, 231 = a butter-seller, and thence a scold, and possibly worse. So an 'oyster-wife' was also called an 'oyster-whore.' Query—treacherous, slippery?

Burley, Tom, ii. 237.

Buttons, maketh, ii. 238 = he bewrayeth himself (through fear). Still = sheep's dung, Devon; and heard now in the London streets among costermongers.

Butter-milke, iii. 240.

Buggery, ii. 244.

Buxom, ii. 298.

Buzzarde, i. 67.

Bull, hangman, ii. 129; iii. 70.

Byng, Dr., i. 63.

By-disputation, i. 78 = aside or intercurrent disputation.

By cause = because, i. 101, 102, *et frequenter.*
Bye-supposes, i. 148. See 'By-disputation.'
Byles = boils, iii. 52.

C.

Cabalists, ii. 251.
Carper, i. 31.
Caueat, i. 53, 189.
Cambridge, Harvey's picture of, i. 69 onward.
Cartwright, Thomas, i. 71, 234; ii. 152, 291.
Casts, of legerdemaine, i. 72, 80.
Cast, water, i. 201; ii. 228 = examine urine.
Casting beyond the moon, i. 226; iii. 32 = attempt impossibilities. See Nares, *s.v.*, for a full Note.
Canuazed = discussed, i. 78; ii. 36, 76, 130, 317.
Caius, Dr., i. 215.
Camarick = cambric, i. 84.
Carlil, M., i. 119.
Canicular, i. 165 = belonging to the dog-star, or hot.
Cautele, i. 191, 287; ii. 208 = caution.
Cautelous, i. 211, 262 = cautious.
Catilinaries, i. 210 = orations against Catiline.
Cart of Croiden = collier's cart, ii. 211.
Cart before the horse, ii. 225.
Carterly, ii. 244.
Carter's logic, i. 214 = abuse.
Cassia, i. 260.
Capon-crammed, i. 291.
Capricious, i. 290 = goatish, lustful.
Casualtie, ii. 8.
Canker, ii. 109 = cancer (metaphorically) = 'cankar,' as in cancer-worm.

Cancer-worm = canker-worm, ii. 23.

Catboltes, ii. 41—a coinage of Harvey's, probably suggested by dog-bolt, a term of reproach.

Castell, lad of the, ii. 44—a corrupt phrasing, originally fetched from Castilian, or Spaniard, and thence 'boaster'? "As the honey of Hybla my old lad of the castle" (1 Henry IV. i. 2) = lad of the type of 'the' Castilian?

Careers, run the, ii. 44, 55, 80, 243, 322 = running the charge.

Cap of maintenance, ii. 54, 243 = cap of State carried before the king and certain mayors of England on ceremonial occasions.

Captain-scold, ii. 58 = the chief scold.

Calepine, ii. 66—his great (Latin) Dictionary was just the book for pedantic Harvey.

Capricians, ii. 91.

Carowse, ii. 92 = health at drinking-bout.

Capricio, Signor, ii. 109.

Calvin, ii. 151 *et freq.*

Canton, ii. 153—in Italian = corner or angle, etc., therefore the division of a county, as in Switzerland.

Cantonish, ii. 153—query an intended quibble from Ital. *cantoniere* = deceiver, and cantonish as a secondary meaning = tricksy or beguiling?

Can-away-with, ii. 157 = agree with.

Cap-case, ii. 228 = small travelling case, originally for holding 'caps.' See Nares, *s.v.*

Captain comforter, ii. 243.

Cattes panges, ii. 246—query p[h]anges = fangs? by = beside or near to.

Caitiue, ii. 327 = mean fellow.

Castilio, Count B., ii. 99, 271. The Editor owns Harvey's autographed and annotated copy of "The Courtier."

Carminist, ii. 275 = poesy-maker.

Carminicall, ii. 275.

Caualieros, ii. 275.

Callimunco, ii. 275—a tortoise-shell cat in Norfolk dialect is a Calimanco cat; but that does not help one. It is a Nashe term, and he neighboured Norfolk.

Cates (also 'acates'), iii. 5 = dainties, all victuals except bread and wine.

Capistrum, iii. 23, 24 = halter, etc.

Cales, iii. 28 = Cadiz, *not* Calais.

Cappes, red, iii. 28.

Cap, cast thy, iii. 31 = aim at, or desire.

Camel, legend of, iii. 34.

Carbonadoed, iii. 42=[meat] broiled on the coals (from Italian).

Captiuated, iii. 49 = taken captive.

Cazament, and his dogs, iii. 54.

Capparus' dog, iii. 55.

Censure = judgment, i. 156, 162, 202, 205; ii. 14, 25; iii. 71.

Censoriall, ii. 276.

Centurians, ii. 143.

Chakes = short cakes, iii. 76, *et alibi*.

Chaucer, i. 165, 252; ii. 228, 311.

Chaulk up, i. 71 = mark up, as drink accounts in public-houses.

Churchyard, M., i. 126, 199; ii. 290.

Chorœbi, i. 193.
Chorabus, iii. 29.
Cheke, Sir John, i. 241, 266; ii. 50, 171.
Chopped, i. 262 = fallen suddenly or by chance upon.
Chopping logic, ii. 244 = disputative logic or argumentation.
Christ's Teares, by Nashe, i. 273.
Check, i. 275.
Cheerely, i. 279.
Chearne, i. 283 = churn.
Charlmaine, i. 295 = Charlemagne.
Chewt, Anthony, ii. 24, 25, 337-8, 341, 344-5, 346.
Chart, ii. 47.
Chiliarkes, ii. 143 = the captains or rather colonels of a thousand men.
Chapman, Dr., ii. 208.
Chapman, of choice, ii. 263.
Chiromancie, ii. 210 = palmistry.
Cherne, ii. 231 = churn.
Cheese-presse, ii. 231.
Cheese-knaue, ii. 231 = servant under the dairy-maid or other.
Chearly, ii. 245. See 'Cheerely.'
Chaderton, Dr., ii. 292.
Chaderton, M., ii. 292.
Cheuerell, ii. 317 = soft kid leather, *i.e.* easily stretched or flexible. "Your *cheveril* conscience" (*Henry VIII.*, ii. 3). Cf. also *Romeo and Juliet* ii. 4, [for 'stretched'], *Twelfth Night* iii. 1 [for 'stretchable' and flexible].
Chettle, ii. 322.

Chance-medley, iii. 14 = killing a person by chance, when the killer does it without evil intent, and a lawful act, though some fault may be due to the killer.
Christen, iii. 29 = baptize.
Channel, iii. 41 = drain.
Cherrihinton, iii. 64.
Chronicles, ii. 196.
Ciuility, ii. 6.
Circumcise, i. 203—misprinted 'cicumcise.'
Circuiting, ii. 72.
Cirurgion = chirurgeon, iii. 22.
Ciphers, without 1, iii. 28 = without 00.
Circles, in water, iii. 51.
Clarke, Joseph, Esq., i., xi.
Clarke, Richard, ii. 244.
Clark, Dr. Barth., ii. 83.
Clearkly = learnedly, i. 20, 43, 61.
Clawbackes = flatterers, i. 71 ; ii. 239.
Claweth, ii. 107 = flattereth.
Climing, i. 252 = ambitious.
Clarentius, ii. 13.
Clunged, ii. 120 = hunger-bitten : Lancashire and elsewhere 'clemmed'.
Cloakebagge, ii. 256.
Cleapeth = nameth, ii. 275.
Close, man, ii. 312 = secret-keeping, selfishly ?
Commaundement, at = ready to consent, iii. 77.
Commoditie, i. 6, 166 ; ii. 288, 299, 314 ; iii. 30.
Comets, and earthquakes ominous, i. 62.
Contentation, i. 64 = contentment.
Comedanties, i. 125 = Ital. *comediante* = stage-players.

Controller = Dr. Perne, i. 73, 182, 183, 234. See under 'Perne.'

Counteruaile, i. 18 = to be of equal value against, balance.

Corculum, i. 38 (see Grosart's *Spenser's Works*, Life, i.) = diminutive of *cor* = sweet or dear heart.

Copper-face, i. 72 = dusky-red, as the copper rose = poppy, and we have 'copper nose' (Cromwell's and others').

Comencements, i. 79 = the times when degrees are taken at the University.

Coye it = assume prudish airs, i. 98 ; ii. 7, 329.

Counteruaileable, i. 106.

Copesmates, i. 125 ; ii. 116, 131 = associates—originally in merchandise.

Coolinge carde, i. 139. See Glossarial-Index to Greene's Works, v.

Coram, i. 162 = before (the magistrate), *Merry Wives of Windsor* I. i. 4.

Complot, ii. 175, 296 = plot together.

Compromit, iii. 95 = Latin *comprimere*, to repress.

Conny-catchers, i. 168, 189. See Greene's Works *frequenter*.

Cooseners, i. 168, 190 = cheaters.

Cogging, i. 168, 200; ii. 214, 328 = cheating with dice.

Collier colours, ii. 217 = black. Cf. 'black artist.'

Conuersable, i. 172.

Cosenage, i. 189 ; ii. 262, 270 = cheating.

Comparisons, odious, i. 192. Made immortal by Dean Donne.

Cowe, curst, i. 192 = vicious cow.
Cōuied, i. 194 = conveyed.
Counter, i. 199; ii. 253 = prison so called.
Coursed, i. 203 = hunted?
Concordance, i. 220 = agreement.
Commination, i. 240 = a threatening—"a commination or denouncing of God's anger" (*Book of Common Prayer*).
Condolement, i. 259.
Counterfesance, i. 261 = a counterfeiting.
Coheaping, i. 264 = heaping together.
Cockereth, i. 275; ii. 121, 269 = indulgeth, pampereth.
Cockes of the game, i. 277 = game cocks—used metaphorically.
Combe, of the honey, i. 280 = the (full) honeycomb.
Couen, i. 287; ii. 262, 317—a legal term — the collusive or deceitful agreement of two or more to the prejudice of a third.
Coward-lane, i. 297.
Counterpoise, ii. 8.
Counter-policy, ii. 8.
Conniuence, ii. 13; iii. 40 = connivance.
Cockhorse, on, ii. 18, 92 = on a fiery or spirited horse —metaphorically to stand on haughty terms, or be haughty. Cf. Cotgrave, "Cheval, estre à."
Counterfaict, ii. 23 = counterfeit.
Coales, bearer of, ii. 31 = submitter to every indignity —probably from mean nature of employment. Usually the form is to 'carry coals.'
Coile, ii. 133 = bustle, or qy. hoisting gear or pulleys? Coal in Lancashire is pronounced 'coil.'

Commotioners, ii. 43, 164 = movers together.
Columbus, of tearmes, ii. 45 = discoverer or inventor of.
Confuters, ii. 46.
Controuersies, endless, ii. 48 (various names).
Conueiance, ii. 60, 77, 262, 314. Shakespeare's use of 'convey' everybody knows.
Coylie, ii. 63.
Conduction, ii. 96 = guidance.
Cortes, Martin, ii. 97, 282.
Conquerous, ii. 98 = full of conquests—a fuller and more embracing word than 'conquering.'
Coweherdes house, ii. 69.
Counselling, ii. 100.
Colman hedge, ii. 110, 112—then a disreputable part of London—a 'Coleman hedge' wench was a prostitute.
Convince, ii. 110 = convict.
Cockish, ii. 116 = cock-like, vaunting or braving.
Collyrium, ii. 128—generally a wash (healing) for the eyes; but here used apparently in Columella's sense, as a medicine for horses and oxen.
Cocke-on-hoope, ii. 133, 158. See Nares, *s.v.*, for a full Note, with examples.
Colourably, ii. 134 = in appearance.
Congruence, ii. 154 = agreement.
Collation, ii. 160 = the conferring or presentation.
Conscionable, ii. 185.
Cock-alilly, ii. 210, 217.
Concupiscence, ii. 214.
Conuented, ii. 193 = the party or person agreed upon or brought in *con* by all or by the majority to be one with them—*i.e.*, their minister. So in Scot's

"Discovery of Witchcraft," b. i., c. 5, where he speaks of a woman being "*con*vented by the civill or canon law." The phrase is a legal one, but it shows a similar use, *one* woman being brought before *others*, the judges. See Dr. Brinsley Nicholson's edition of Scot *in loco.*

Cowe, dun, of Dunsmore, ii. 223.

Cowe, in cage, ii. 283.

Cotqueane, ii. 230 = a masculine hussy, a scold and more.

Cole, Humphrey, ii. 289.

Cole-harbour, iii. 26—a place or *hospitium*—properly Cold Harbour (London). Cf. Nares, *s.v.*

Cole-rake, ii. 232 = a rake used for raking a fire or oven.

Comprimitt, iii. 95.

Conster, ii. 246; iii. 36 = construe.

Coosened, ii. 247 = cheated.

Commenters, ii. 257 = commentators or interpreters.

Corrigidore, ii. 275—Spanish *corregidor*—a corrector; also the chief justice or governor of a town, the clerk of the market, etc.

Contaminated, ii. 275.

Collops [of meat], ii. 275.

Coursest, ii. 279 = coarsest.

Coony-caught, ii. 282.

Contingents, ii. 282.

Combe-cutt, ii. 283 = the comb of a cock or cokes, a fool, being cut, *i.e.* made a craven of.

Cowll, ii. 284 = Harvey's spelling of 'coll,' to embrace or clasp.

Cooper, Dr., ii. 292.

Conscience, Ephemerides of his, ii. 301 = the Almanac of his conscience (Perne's) was a current Prognostication for the fifty years he flourished. Almanacs were then 'Prognostications,' and he means apparently that Perne varied with every variation of the political and ecclesiastical accidents or happenings of the then or coming season.

Comicall, ii. 300—use of the word as in Dante's 'Divine *Comedy*' = acting a part.

Counterpane (verb), ii. 300—as a subst. it signifies one of a pair of deeds or indentures, the counterpart or other copy—a legal term.

Countermotted, ii. 308 = countermottoed. See 'mott' in context.

Cockemaster, iii. 10.

Conuicious, iii. 19—a probable coinage by Harvey = not vicious in any single particular, but in many vices together.

Course, by, iii. 26 = in order.

Contex, iii. 30 = context—from 'weave together.'

Cosmologizd, iii. 40—from κοσμος and λογος.

Cosoned, iii. 61 = cheated.

Coate, fool's, iii. 64-5—livery of the professional fool.

Crissecrosse rowe, i. 129—the row of capital letters of the alphabet in the Horn-book.

Crewe, i. 140; ii. 199—company. Used in no ill sense now except of a ship's crew.

Crafte, gentle, i. 166 = shoemaker's—but why?

Crosbiters, i. 168, 274; ii. 74, 229 = cheaters. 'Cross' is here used in the sense of 'not on the square'—to fight on the cross is not to fight fairly.

Croft, Sir James, i. 182.

Crie, out of, i. 196 = a hunting term—and as an animal beyond 'cry' is far away, it is used as here for pathetical extremely, or out of all whooping.

Crowes, idot, i. 204 ; white, i. 288—the latter = scarce or unusual things.

Crancke, i. 233 ; ii. 7, 59, 113, 115, 128 ; cranknesse, ii. 277, 324 ; iii. 35, 52 = brisk, lively : as subst. it means a twisting or crooked fellow, an impostor or cheat.

Crankly, ii. 42.

Crossetreade, ii. 39 = to tread on, as a crow treads on and picks up the ground with its claws, and so does harm and destroys.

Crosbarres, ii. 56—this shot folds up and enters the gun (= cannon) as a solid shot, but when it leaves the muzzle takes the form of a cross-bar having at each extremity a quarter of a round shot. Cf. Admiral Smith's 'Sailors' Word-book,' *s.v.*

Crake, ii. 70, 273, 281, 286, 308 ; iii. 46 = grumble, speak creakingly.

Crowders, ii. 123 = fiddlers—a fiddle was called a 'crowd.'

Cros-cloth, ii. 229 = kerchief, or cloth crossed round the head or bosom. See Nares, *s.v.*

Crab-tree deske, ii. 237—a crab-tree cudgel was common ; hence Harvey's would-be witty figure.

Cromwell, Lord, ii. 247.

Crusado, ii. 289 = a Portugese coin. See Nares, *s.v.*, for full Note.

Crinch, crintch, iii. 9, 44 = shrink, crouch.

Crocodile, iii. 21.
Cronet = coronet, iii. 42.
Criticism, school, ii. 52.
Curtoll, i. 21, 139 = curtal or curtail—one docked of or shortened in its tail.
Curious, i. 33, 176, 202, 286; ii. 43, 119, 142, 298; iii. 71 = full of care, even to prying into.
Cunnyes = coneys, i. 49; legend of, iii. 59, 60.
Cut, perfect, iii. 15, 16, 50, 64.
Cuttingly, ii. 40.
Cutters, ii. 42, 57, 205 = swash-bucklers, ruffians, robbers, etc., as in Cowley's '*Cutter* of Coleman Street.' See his complete Works in *Chertsey Worthies' Library*, 2 vols. 4to.
Cutting, ii. 52.
Currie favour, ii. 188, 298 = seek favour, fawn.
Cunnies, iii. 76.
Cunnycatch, i. 274, 295 = deceive, cheat, trick, as one does a coney = a simple fellow.
Cunny catching, iii. 26.
Cuckingstoole, ii. 61, 220, 230 = ducking-stool (used for witches, scolds, and worse).
Curate, ii. 108, 183; anecdote of, iii. 71.
Cuttes, draw, ii. 130, 221—thus described because the paper, straw, or wood, etc., was cut into different lengths.
Cumane asse, ii. 248.
Curstest, ii. 231 = ill-tempered, shrewish—superlative of 'curst.'
Curtailed, ii. 231 = docked in the tail.
Cussionet, ii. 319 = little cushion.
Cuckow, iii. 11—a significant word o' old times.

Cue, iii. 57. See Nares, *s.v.*, for a full Note: but here = key?
Cummes me, iii. 81.

D.

D's, iii. 16.
Daintie, iii. 94 = nice, not squeamish.
Dapper, i. 93; ii. 59, 128 = neat, spruce, small and active—still in use.
Daniell, Samuel, i. 218; ii. 290.
Dalliance, i. 291; ii. 156.
Danter, Thomas, Printer, ii. 18, 42, 229, 280.
Dandiprat, ii. 115 = dwarf, small person. See Nares, *s.v.*
Daunce attendance, ii. 43.
Dante, ii. 103.
Dash, ii. 118 = put out of countenance, lower.
Dash-Nash, ii. 120 = a would-be satirical coinage against Nashe.
Darcye, ii. 216.
Daggle-tailed, ii. 229, 240 = draggle-tailed, slatternly.
Dædalist, ii. 290 = architect and sculptor.
Deade suer, iii. 80 = absolutely sure.
Decyphering, i. 95, 168; ii. 213, 326 = interpreting. See Greene *frequenter.*
Devises = devices, i. 111.
Deuiseful, i. 196 = full of devices.
Dee, M., i. 127; ii. 290.
Defend [se], i. 140.
Deluded deceived, iii. 80.
Demetrius, M., i. 159 onward, 238; ii. 74.

Depraueth, i. 187 ; ii. 251, 301 = corrupteth, depreciateth.

Deprauers, ii. 94.

De Thoemes, don Lazarello, i. 206 — error for 'Thormes.'

Delict, ii. 156 = Latin *dilictum*, fault, offence (primarily omitting to do what we ought to do).

Demi-scholler, i. 230.

Deuoreux, Walter, i. 246.

Demurr, ii. 17.

Demerit, ii. 21 = merit—from Latin: the French, Italian, and Spanish thus use it. So do Minsheu and Cocker give this sense.

Descry, ii. 40 = point out or '*cry* out.'

Descride = pointed out, ii. 336.

Dead fleshe, ii. 62 = figure for inactivity.

Deale = arrange.

Despiteous, ii. 84 = pitiful or to be pitied? or query —despiteful?

Deseignementes, ii. 140 = designs.

Decurion, ii. 143 = an officer over ten, or some say thirty-two men; also the councillor or chief officer of a provincial city.

Democraty, ii. 153. See 'Aristocraty.'

Deformation, ii. 153, 196 = misrule.

Delphicall, ii. 193 = oracular.

Deuoire, ii. 257, 320 (Fr.) = duty.

Declamatorie, ii. 276.

Delone, Thomas, ii. 280, 281.

Deering, ii. 292.

Descant, iii. 33.

Demi-hell, prison a, iii. 48

Dexterious, iii. 70.

Dia-pap-fig-nut, ii. 216—a made-up word — 'dia' was frequently joined to the chief ingredient of medicinal compositions.

Diapason, fooles, ii. 132.

D'Israeli, Isaac, i., xlvii.

Diueling, i. 84 = a little devil (as costumed on the stage, etc.)

Distraute, i. 112 = distraught.

Discommendable, i. 124.

Diuels Oratour, i. 156, *et freq.*

Dishability, i. 156 = disability.

Displeasure, i. 174, 213.

Disease, i. 196, 215, 250 = discomfort and disease.

Dia-margaritam or Dia-ambre, i. 267—the former a restorative powder chiefly of pearl (Kersey) —the latter probably a restrictive composed of *ambre*, Fr. for amber, but whether our amber or amber-grease (grey amber) the Editor knows not.

Disbalased, i. 279 = unballasted, unladen.

Disbowell, i. 292 = disembowell.

Diamant and diamond, i. 295; ii. 94, 266, 338 = diamond.

Dissolute, ii. 11, 32, 139, 220, 229—used sometimes by Harvey in its present sense of 'licentious' or immoral; but also as = dissolved, let loose.

Dissoluteness, ii. 82.

Disfauorable, ii. 14.

Ditty, ii. 93.

Digges, Thomas, ii. 99, 290.

Discipline, displing, ii. 176, 237.

Disputatiue, ii. 276.
Dilatement, ii. 276 = delay ?
Discommodity, ii. 288; iii. 30.
Dismasketh, ii. 291, 312 = unmasketh.
Dick, desperate, ii. 328—Dick seems by several examples to have been used as a common name of no one in particular, as we use Smith, Brown, Jones and Robinson. In the text it was the more likely to have been used as being alliterative with 'desperate.'
Dicker, of dickes, iii. 25 = a bundle of ten of anything, hides, etc.
Distich, best contrived, iii. 37.
Dildoe, iii. 63. See Ash, etc., *s.v.*
Dishe clowte, i. 281.
Done = done with, given over, i. 8.
Dogging = following up (as a sporting dog the game), i. 37.
Dogged, i. 165—in Norfolk = ill done (Halliwell-Phillipps, *s.v.*)
Doctorally = learnedly, i. 44.
Dowty, i. 192, 193, 215 = doughty.
Dowteest, i. 235—superlative.
Doulcely, i. 240 = sweetly.
Doomefull, i. 254 = carrying doom.
Doting, ii. 8 = foolish.
Dooue, ii. 15, 292—Dr. Dove, Bp. of Peterborough, fellow-student of Spenser.
Dogge-fish, ii. 122.
Dogboltes, ii. 41 = a term of reproach. See Lyly's *Campaspe*, i. 2.
Dodipoles, ii. 63, 90, 246 = stupid, lumpish persons.

Dodkin, ii. 73, 113, 115 = trifling fellow (after the small corn so called).

Dodecomechanists, ii. 91—δοδεκα μηχανη or μοικος = the dodekatheos or secret and lecherous banquets of Augustus. See Suetonius, *s.n.* (Mr. W. G. Stone, Bridport).

Doung-voiding, ii. 110.

Dorbell, ii. 246—'dorbelish' is Lincoln for 'clumsy' (Halliwell-Phillipps, *s.v.*).

Dor-beetle, ii. 251, 272—a beetle, from its knocking when flying at night against people or things, was supposed to be blind. From the same it seems to have been thought foolish, for as beetlehead = blockhead, so dor-beetle = foolish beetle.

Dorre, ii. 272 = drone bee.

Dolt, iii. 16.

Doterell, iii. 16 = silly fellow. See curious Note in Nares, *s.v.*

Dogs, the Ile of—a play by Nashe, iii. 50 onward; 54 onward; 60 onward.

Dog, anecdotes of, iii. 54 onward.

Dog-daies, iii. 58.

Drant, Thomas, i. 9, 23, 36, 76, 100; ii. 292.

Dranting, ii. 131. Dr. Drant wrote rules for English prosody—hence Harvey uses it for = prosodizing or scanning of verse.

Droute = drought, i. 128.

Drumme, of Flushing, i. 283.

Driblinge, ii. 49 = trifling or inefficacious. Cf. *Measure for Measure* i. 4.

Drisle, ii. 49.

Drawer, ii. 57 = the tapster.

Drab, ii. 272 = slattern (and worse).
Drabs, he or she, ii. 231.
Dromedarie, ii. 233.
Drumme, Tom, ii. 240—famous from the drama of *Tom Drum's Entertainment.* See full and interesting Note in Nares, *s.v.* It came to be a jocular name for a fellow treated as a dunce, beaten, etc.
Draffe-maides, ii. 245 = maids who took out dirt or refuse (as for instance to pigs)—probably a term of contempt coined by Harvey.
Drad, ii. 253, 258 = dread.
Drake, Sir Francis, ii. 96, 97.
Dromidote ergonist, ii. 275. See Nashe, *s.v.*
Drift, iii. 7 = bearing, purpose.
Dryly, ii. 295.
Dub, a dubb, i. 50 = imitation of drum-beat.
Dungle-cockes = dunghill cocks, i. 71—or query = dungal, *i.e.* noisy (Northern).
Duffington, M., i. 127.
Dunse, ii. 246; iii. 16.
Dunsery, ii. 274.
Dunsically, dunstically, i. 194; ii. 276; iii. 16.
Dumpes, i. 272 = sadness.
Dumpish, ii. 246.
Duellist, ii. 55, 242.
Dudgen, ii. 221, 245 = discontent. But see Nares' full note, *s.v.*
Dubba-dubba-dubb, ii. 225—see under 'Dub-a-dubb.'
Ducking-chariot, ii. 229—ducking-stool for witches, scolds, etc., used as a chariot.
Dug, ii. 254 = breast.
Dummerell, ii. 283 = a dummerer, *i.e.* a dumb fellow.

Dust-footed, ii. 53.
Dye, iii. 214 = die—singular of 'dice.'
Dyer, Sir Edward, i. 7, 8, 9, 37, 75, 86, 111, 244, 266, 267; ii. 266.

E.

Earthquake, i. 40 *et freq.*
Eares, cropped, iii. 60, 61.
Eares, moveable, iii. 69.
Eclyptique, ii. 326.
Eckenberg, i. 295.
Eele of Ely, ii. 56—probably a hit at the contemporary bishop of Ely. Cf. iii. 63.
Eely = Ely, iii. 38.
Effectionate, i. 227 = affectionate.
Eftsoones, i. 262 *et freq.* = immediately.
Egging, ii. 90 = urging on? But see p. 89 ('egges')—a pun perhaps meant.
Egall, ii. 343 = equal.
Egregious, i. 175; ii. 39; egregiously, i. 205, 247.
Eldership, ii. 149.
Elder tree, ii. 149, 150.
Eligible, ii. 276.
Elizabeth, Queen, i., xxv onward; xxxviii onward; 25; ii. 266.
Elderton, i. 62, 126, 163, 164, 165, 172, 201, 210; ii. 57, 65, 71, 96, 129, 132, 216—the drunken ballad-writer.
Eluish, i. 222.
Eleuate, ii. 40, 107 = elevated; or query = high?
Elencticall, ii. 118 = ελεγτικος, censorious.
Ely, bishop of, iii. 63.
Emplaster, ii. 251 = plaster.

Empiriques, ii. 251.
Emproue = prove, i. 157, 286; ii. 105, 111, 129, 143, 327.
Emulation, i. 268.
Empeachments, ii. 8, 12 = accusations.
Embraued, ii. 19, 22.
Empress, ii. 114.
Employable, ii. 254.
Enhableth, ii. 165 = enableth.
Enormious, iii. 14 = enormous. The 'i' is frequently thus introduced.
Enuie, iii. 69.
Enure, i. 35 = make use of or bring into use.
Entend = attend, i. 173 = stretch to.
Engraced, i. 219 = made graceful or gracious.
Entelechy, i. 247; ii. 105, 106, 107, 283, 286, 287 = ἐντελεχεια, perfection, state when complete, form.
Enseall, i. 249 = make to seal, *i.e.* seal.
Endenizoned, i. 266.
Enthronished, ii. 8.
Ensweeten, ii. 16.
Encalme, ii. 16.
Enfreight, ii. 17 =freight.
Enginer, ii. 41.
Enterlace, ii. 82.
Enticingest, ii. 104.
Entry = entrance, iii. 80.
Englutt, ii. 114 = glut.
Enchronicled, ii. 324.
Epiphany, ii. 286, 287.
Ephemeron, iii. 53.
Ephory, laconical, ephorie, ii. 187, 188 = inspector, inspectors (ἐφορος, -οι).

Equipollent, i. 106; ii. 140.
Equality, unequal, ii. 159.
Erasmus, i. 124.
Errantest, ii. 32 = arrantest.
Essex, Earl of, i. 175; ii. 15, 97.
Eschewing, iii. 19, 52.
Est Amen, ii. 120, 121, 161 = conclusion or sum, but a stronger ending than the natural conclusion. Amen or So is it = It is and must be. Here is an instance: "God be praised. It is so, Amen." (*Superior of Stonyhurst College.*)
Ethnicke, ii. 141 = heathen.
Etimologised, iii. 6.
Euict = evince, ii. 260.
Euphues, i. 189, ii. 124, 128, 212, 213, 216, 218, 226. Euphues was Lyly—'young Euphues,' notwithstanding (ii. 128), seems to be Nashe.
Euphuing, ii. 125, 131, 219, 220.
Euphuisme, ii. 131, 202, 234.
Euphuists, ii. 223, 227.
Euforbium, i. 260 = euphorbium, a thorny plant, once officinal, purging, and very acrid.
Euangely = evangel or gospel, i. 264.
Experimente, ii. 33 (verb), 36 (subst.)
Experimented, i. 19 = experienced or tried.
Extemporall, i. 111, 125.
Exspired, i. 138 = breathed out—a kind of quibble-pun.
Extenuate, i. 189; ii. 12 = (Latinate) minish or make little or slender, this being the result of drawing a thing out as into wire.
Exploit, ii. 111 = seek out.

F.

Faulte, i. 33, 34—in the former is a subst., and=made them a fault, *i.e.* done them a fault or injury; in the latter a verb.

Faerie Queene, i. 38, 94, 95, 164, 191, 244.

Fadg, iii. 97 = suit, agree, fit in.

Faye = faith, i. 113.

Factour, i. 126 = actor in or agent (as now).

Fauorise, ii. 171 = favour.

Fantasticalitie, i. 190, 223.

Fauste precor gelida, i. 195—from the first eclogue of Mantuanus, *i.e.* "Baptista Spagnolo," used then as a first Latin book in schools.

Falanta, downe-didle, i. 282 — the burden of a song or songs. See Nashe's *Summer's Last Will and Testament.*

Fauourous, ii. 14 = favouring.

Factioners, ii. 43.

Faine = desire, iii. 81.

Faint, iii. 75, 80, 91 = fain—the spelling so *frequenter.*

Fa-fe-fi-fo-fu, ii. 72—this was afterwards introduced into the story of "Jack the Giant Killer," with fum for fu. Probably it was at first an attempt to indoctrinate the youthful mind with the sound of the letter f when combined with the vowels, just as we have Ba-be-bi-bo-bu spelt by the child B-a ba, b-e be, etc.

Faustus, Dr., ii. 209.

Fardle, ii. 220, 256 = bundle, burden.

Far to seeke, ii. 229 = far deviously, both to right and left.

Faire, ii. 260 = a multitude, as at a market.

Faph, ii. 273—imitative word = flaph? or query—Harvey's spelling of our fah or faugh?

Fart, ii. 296.

Fetches = tricks, i. 72.

Fell, i. 90, ii. 115; felly, ii. 338 . .
Fellest, i. 212, 247, ii. 77 . . .
Felinger, i. 206 . . . . .
Felnes=fellness, *i.e.* fierceness, iii. 34

} Usual English adjective from Latin *fel*, gall, and Fr. *felle*, which has also varied from its original meaning to fierce, cruel, etc.

Fellowlye, i. 119 = like a fellow.

Feeid, i. 291.

Feate, ii. 156, 325 = neat.

Featly, ii. 277, 299.

Feudist, ii. 81, 222, 251 = plotter of feuds, or one who has a feud.

Festues, ii. 104—query = fescue = Fease-straw, the point or pin used to point to the letters when teaching. But *festuca* is Italian for straw as well as for fescue.

Feciall Law, ii. 205 = Law of heralds or ambassadors (Latin *fecialis*).

Festiually, ii. 227.

Ferry-penny, iii. 27 = Charon's penny, of the myth.

Fight, plaiest least in—misprint for 'sight'? iii. 56.

Fisnamie = physiognomy, i. 84.

Fingeringe, i. 113.

Filosofer = Philosopher, i. 127.

Fier, ii. 209.

Fie, i. 178.

Fie out—misprint for 'fie on't,' iii. 27.

Filly-folly, ii. 95—an intensitive reduplication, much like our 'fiddle-faddle' (which see).

Fidle-fadles, ii. 98.

Fill, iii. 80, etc., etc. = fell.

Fillip, ii. 246 = a jerk of a finger from the other, a quick touch of a whip; hence sometimes = encouragement, and sometimes, as here, 'a touch-up.'

Finicallitie, ii. 276 = over-niceness or over-preciseness.

Fictionate, ii. 275—fictitious—another Nashe word here laughed at.

Fitt = feat, iii. 80.

Fisgig, ii. 90 = a trotter up and down (in bad sense). It is used now for 'fireworks' vulgarly, but query then?

Fisking, ii. 90, 270 = frisking about, idling.

Fiend, stamping, ii. 230—merely metaphorical.

Fledge, i. 71—the verb used as adj. = fledged, as in Shakespeare.

Flashes, ii. 221; flashingest, ii. 239.

Flatte, i. 84.

Flatly = plainly, i. 145; iii. 76.

Flim-flams, ii. 235 = impositions, lies, nonsensical fables—used still in the United States.

Flesh, ii. 133.

Flush, i. 156; ii. 164 = great number.

Flea, ii. 244—Dean Donne has celebrated the 'flea,' and Peter Woodhouse in "Democritus his Dreame. Or, the Contention between the Elephant and the Flea" (1605), reproduced in Dr. Grosart's *Occasional Issues*.

Flurt, i. 164 = flirt, to throw with a sudden motion (dirt out) = taunt or scoff.

Floorishingest, ii. 252.

Fling, i. 164—used metaphorically, as when a horse 'flings at' one he flings out his heels.
Fleeting, i. 183, 184.
Flibber-gibbet, ii. 272 = sycophant or lying knave. But see Nares, *s.v.*
Flintly, i. 195 = flinty.
Fleabiting, i. 198.
Flaunt-aflaunt, ii. 61. A reduplicate intensitive = flaunting exhibition.
Floyd, Dr. Griffin, ii. 83.
Floide, ii. 290.
Fletcher, Dr., ii. 292.
Flushing-out, ii. 114 = pouring out as a flood.
Fleering, ii. 296 = jeering.
Flowting-stocke, ii. 309 = a stock or stone, to be flouted or jeered at.
Fooles, in retayle, ii. 34, 235; ship of, ii. 221; S., ii. 235 = fools in every item; paradise of, iii. 27.
Fooleries = follies, i. 19, 191; ii. 219.
Foole-munger, ii. 91.
Foole, master, of Theater, ii. 212—merely a gibe at Lyly, and through him at Nashe.
Fourmes = benches, i. 41.
Formiddiste, i. 143 = most formidable.
Fond, i. 160, 168 = foolish; ii. 8.
Foist in, ii. 148, 281 = cheat.
Foisting, i. 168; ii. 88.
Forehorse, i. 173 = leader.
Fortune, my foe, i. 178.
Fox, ii. 297.
Foxe = Dr. Perne, i. 179. (See under 'Perne, Dr.') He puns on Foxe's Martyrology.

Foled, i. 188 = fooled (he means Greene).
Folio, i. 200, 213.
Forspoke, ii. 300 = bewitched.
Footeman, i. 259.
Foiles, i. 262.
Foines, ii. 221 = fencing term for thrusts.
Fortune (verb), i. 270.
Forspoken, i. 283.
Foote, mine owne, ii. 12.
Fornam'd, ii. 24.
Foreman, ii. 40.
Forbisher = Frobisher, Sir Martin, ii. 96.
Fopp, ii. 240 = dandy.
Foile, take the, ii. 241 = take the defeat, and therefore in wrestling the fall; foyle, ii. 324.
Fortune-wright, ii. 258, 298.
Fraye, i. 43 = quarrelling disturbance.
French occurrences, i. 174, 175.
French king, i. 269.
France, i. 218.
Frutefuller, ii. 14.
Frump, ii. 17 = snubb.
Frumpeth, ii. 107, 133; iii. 28.
Friskes, ii. 44.
Frisking, ii. 51, 91, 278.
Franke, ii. 110 = open.
Frier Rush, Tuck, ii. 215.
Frank-tenement, ii. 229 = free-tenement or free-holding.
Fritters, ii. 276 = food cut up into morsels and fried.
Front-tufted, ii. 309—Time's forelock is meant.

Frost, iii. 11—misprint for 'first.'
Frendship, Nashe taunted on, iii. 45-6.
Fulfil, ii. 146; iii. 79.
Funeral Teares of Mary Magdalene, i. 273, 288.
Furibundall, ii. 17 = mad or madlike—Latin *furibundus.*
Fulke, Dr., ii. 157.
Furnish, ii. 229.
Furniture, ii. 9.
Fustian, ii. 246 = coarse language or unmannerly; also gibberish—metaphor from cloth so called.
Furno, Vitalis de, ii. 252.
Fyle = defile, i. 89.

G.

Gaffers, ii. 127—another Nashe word, but still used = an old man.
Gardner, Bp., i. 72.
Gallantshipp, i. 122.
Gage, laid all to, i. 170.
Gascoigne, George, i. 170, 171, 180; ii. 57, 73, 96, 115, 290.
Gay nothing, i. 190 'a gay nothing,' the G being used because Harvey makes it a personal nickname.
Garish, i. 201, 229; ii. 220, 277.
Gawins, i. 224 = Sir Gawin.
Gallimaufry, i. 282; ii. 58 = mixture of odds and ends. See Nares, *s.v.*
Galiard, i. 296; galiardest, ii. 284—(Fr.) = lively, gamesome, brave.
Gargantuas race, i. 296—see 'Rabelais.'

Gargantuist, ii. 224.

Gag-tooth'd, ii. 18, 225 = having projecting or prominent teeth.

Gag-tongue, ii. 225; Gag-penne, ii. 225—a Harvey coinage, apparently meaning a tongue that projects or spues out extemporally or at once. So the other = a ready pen (in a bad sense). A 'gag,' in theatrical language, is an extempore saying inserted by the actor.

Gautius, ii. 25.

Gagliards, ii. 51; or galliards—a lively kind of dances. See 'Galiard.'

Gambolds, ii. 51; and Gambowlde, i. 78.

Ganimeds, ii. 91 = Ganymedes = male harlots.

Gawin, tales of Sir, ii. 129, 237.

Garboiles, ii. 176 = turmoils.

Gargarismes, ii. 218 = gargles—hence metaphorically words or phrases that can't be swallowed (by any one of taste).

Galeasse, of knaves, ii. 221 = large ship of.

Gadbees, ii. 224 = stinging bees. So gad-flies.

Gallemalla, ii. 229.

Ganging, weeke and day, ii. 240 = Rogation week, because they then perambulate the (parish) boundaries.

Gamaliel, Hobgoblin, ii. 246.

Gant du Fregeuille, ii. 338.

Geere, i. 115 = movable goods; and so here matter, etc.

Gentlest, ii. 201.

Gentleman, Printers, ii. 88—query = our printer's devil or imp?

Gentlewoman, i. 276-84, 295-6; ii. 16, 263, 264, 319, 320-27, 329. See Memorial-Introduction—Critical, in present volume.

Gemmemint, ii. 216 = Gemmery = jewel-house — hence this = either an 'electuary' of gems or bedizening with gems—either being, according to Harvey, false gems.

Geese, ii. 220.

Gentility, ii. 249.

Geryon, ii. 316.

Giueth me, i. 57 = as my mind leadeth me, as I with probability think.

Girdes, ii. 39, 133 = quips, taunts.

Girding, i. 204; ii. 107.

Gilbert, Sir Humphrey, i. 210, 246; ii. 96.

Girke, i. 283 = jerk = beat.

Gig, hobbling, i. 283 = spinning top.

Girn'd, i. 297 = grinned, laughed at.

Gibinge, ii. 75 = jibing.

Gibeth, ii. 219.

Gingerly, ii. 209 = carefully, quietly, nicely or mincingly.

Gillian-flurtes, ii. 229 = flirting and flighty young women. 'Gill-flirt' is still used in Kent.

Gibbihorse, ii. 246—query Hobby-horse?

Gibalter, ii. 246.

Gilgilis Hoberdehoy, ii. 246—a Nashe phrase.

Gibridge, ii. 270; iii. 36 = nonsense—a spelling of our gibberish.

Gimpanado, ii. 275—another Nashe word.

Glicking, i. 260; ii. 133 = jesting.

Glose, ii. 10 = flatter.

Glibbest, ii. 56 = smoothest, most voluble.
Glistering, ii. 149.
Glossomachicall, iii. 13 = tongue-fighting ?
Gnomes, i. 218 ; ii. 309.
Gnarring, i. 242 = snarling.
Gnasharduccio, ii. 18—some Italianate invention by Harvey from our 'gnash,' with a pun on Nashe.
God, anecdote, iii. 33.
God's plenty, ii. 89 = abundance, harvest—then a common phrase. See Nashe's *S. L. W. and Test.* Curiously enough, the opposite expression, 'the devil's store,' seems to have had the same meaning.
Godbewyes = God-be-with-you's, i. 19. See iii. 96, 'God be wye' = God be with you.
Godful, i. 273 ; ii. 202.
Goddilge, i. 24 = God *dilige* (favour) you—same as 'God dild' and 'God ild'—usually explained (erroneously) as = God yield or requite you.
Godmorrowes = good-morrows, or greetings, i. 40.
God-ditch her = much good do it, iii. 96.
Goddes forbid, ii. 270.
God be wye = God-be-with-you, iii. 96.
Gorbellyed, i. 24 = large-paunched.
Gorgon, i. 257.
Goose-cap, ii. 73 = one who wears or ought to wear the goose-cap (a school punishment), and hence = a dunce or fool.
Gonne, ii. 187.
Gorge, David = George, ii. 164, 169, 176.
Goggle eye, ii. 211 = squint-eye.
Gossip, ii. 230.

Goodman Sathan, ii. 270.
Gowge, ii. 290.
Gotam, wise men of, iii. 34 (generally Gotham) = fools.
Gramercie, i. 78, 195, 201 = the French and English 'grand mercie' = great thanks.
Grandsier, i. 141 = Adam.
Grandame, ii. 38.
Grandiloquous, ii. 272 = grandiloquent.
Grafton, ii. 290.
Graine, in, ii. 51—metaphor from 'dyeing,' *i.e.* dyed through the substance.
Grauelled, ii. 296 = defeated—because a wrestler when thrown on the 'gravel' was defeated; or it may be, run ashore, as a ship.
Gratulate, iii. 1.
Greene, Robert, i., xv, xliv, xlviii, xlix, l; 153, 156 onward; 164, 165, 167, 168, 169 onward; 189, 203, 208; ii. 50, 75, *et freq.*
Greene, Infortunatus, i. 169, 170.
Greenwood, ii. 146.
Greene sleaues, i. 161—reference to a popular ballad, or rather ballads.
Greene head, i. 172.
Greenesse, i. 202.
Grouchius, i. 119.
Grinuile, Sir Richard, i. 246; ii. 97.
Great-great, ii. 6—example of a not unfrequent reduplication = very great, etc.
Greating = greeting, iii. 94.
Greeuousser, ii. 34.
Grosers, ii. 219.

Grammered, ii. 246.
Guise, i. 262, 295.
Guy, Sir, ii. 223 [of Warwick].
Guerras, two, ii. 250.
Gynne, i. 89 = if.

H.

Hable = able, i. 32; ii. 112, 211, 325; iii. 90, etc.
Habilitye, i. 111, 117, 193; ii. 69, 111, 261, 311, 335; iii. 90.
Hansomly, i, 22; iii. 80, etc. = dexterously, or rather in a handy and quick manner.
Halfied, i. 119.
Haddon, i. 241; ii. 248.
Halliday = holy-day, iii. 75.
Halfpenny, ii. 65—used figuratively for that which is then engrossing his thoughts.
Hagge, ii. 229.
Hagishe, ii. 92 = wild, a haggard, a wild and unreclaimed hawk.
Haggard, ii. 236.
Hackluit, ii. 96.
Haddock, ii. 114, 268.
Hale, ii. 115.
Hacksters, ii. 127.
Hammereth, ii. 237 = thinketh and broodeth, etc., works in the (head).
Hammer-drudge, ii. 280 = the apprentice of a blacksmith who can do nothing more than this in his new trade.
Hammer-headed, iii. 16—a common phrase for a heavy-headed, doltish fellow.

Harteroote, i. 116 = root of the heart.
Harding, i. 234; ii. 248.
Harpers, blind, ii. 123.
Hare-brained, ii. 237.
Hare, legend of, iii. 59.
Hariot, ii. 290.
Harborough, ii. 330 = lodging or place of refuge (as in Spenser).
Hap, iii. 6 (misprinted 'harp' in the original).
Hardly = harder, iii. 32; = with difficulty, iii. 44.
HARVEY'S birth-date and birth-place, i., x; family, *ib.*; fire-place inscriptions, xi; father, xi, xii; at Cambridge, xii, xiii; quarrel, xiii; famous at, *ib.*; travelling doubtful, xiv; almanacks, *ib.*; astrology, *ib.*; candidate for orator, *ib.* and 79; Civil Law Doctor at Oxford, xiv, xv; familiar acquaintance of Sidney, xv; Spenser's Sonnet, *ib.*; books characterised, *ib.*; prolonged life, xv, xvi; folios of Spenser, xvi; elegy on death, *ib.*; Latin works, *ib.*; translated extracts, xviii; Latin verse translated extracts, xxv; books by brothers, xliii; Morley's Defence, *ib.*; critically refuted, xlv; no vindication possible, xlviii; Hexameters, *ib.*; summary estimate, xlix, l; unpublished works, i. 69, 87, 180, 181; Letter-Book, i. 109 onward: father of, *ib.*; 160, 167, 206, 250-1; brothers, *ib.*; Richard, 186, 188; read philosophy lecture, i. 201-2; publications unauthorized, i. 202; book to be published, i. 280; John's 'Welcome to Greene,' i. 249.
Harvey, *story of Mercy*, iii. 73 onward.
Hatton, i. 246; ii. 247.

Hauter, i. 161 = halter (for rhyme's sake).
Hawked, i. 262.
Hayhohalliday, i. 282—either another popular refrain, or the cry of the lower class in joy for a holiday.
Hatcher, ii. 24, 83.
Hawks meate, iii. 85 = flesh unfitting human food; besides it, includes the thought that he was a preying hawk.
Hayle-fellowes wel met, i. 73.
Headdie, ii. 207 = headstrong.
Head-lecturer, iii. 71 = chief.
Hermogenes' mettall, i. 71—a rhetorician of Tarsus A.D. 161—180—a noted orator at fifteen, but a child after twenty-five, he having fallen into mental debility.
Hermes, i. 142.
Herostratus = Erostratus, i. 155.
Hell-hounde, i. 290.
Herculean, ii. 35.
Hester, John, ii. 18, 289.
Hermaphrodites, ii. 96, 276.
Heteroclitall, ii. 133 = (literally) bending the wrong way; hence generally used for 'irregularly declined.' Here the former serves, as he is speaking of Marprelate having been obscenely confuted.
Hemerobaptistes, ii. 173—a sect so called = daily baptists, because they daily washed themselves (religiously).
Heterogenised, ii. 181 = made different in kind, made heterogeneous.
Hereditaments, ii. 203.

Hedge-stakes, ii. 224.
Hecuba, ii. 231.
Hexameters, i., xlviii, 7, 8, 43, 182.
Heywood, ii. 290; 'Faste Binde,' ii. 311.
Hick-scorner, ii. 132 = a libertine, who scoffs at religion, as was this character in an Interlude of the name—also applied to the Vice of a play.
Highgate, ii. 198.
Historiologers, ii. 215.
Hibber-gibber, ii. 63 = gibberish, unmeaning sounds or phrases, ape's language.
Hicket, ii. 284 = hiccough.
Hingelles, iii. 19.
Ho, ii. 128 = staying or stopping, from Ho or Whoa to a horse.
Hob-all-as, ii. 246.
Hobbling, ii. 18.
Hobb, blinded, ii. 277.
Howlets = the barn or white owls, i. 70.
Howlsum, i. 144 = wholesome.
Hooreson, i. 194; ii. 129 = whoreson } one subst.; one
Hoursome, ii. 232. } adjective.
Hore, i. 197.
Hoat-spurres, i. 204, 213, 232, *et freq.*
Horseplay, i. 214; ii. 76 = rough, or over-rough play.
Holly, as a holly-hock, i. 274 = as holy as a holly-hock, *i.e.*, not at all.
Horne, i. 284.
Horne-booke, ii. 215 = a sheet or page containing alphabet, etc., for learners, protected by a horn plate.
Hospitality, ii. 20.

Howte, ii. 42 = hoot.
Hotchpot, ii. 58.
Hooke, or crooke, ii. 59, 304—one way or the other—still a common proverb. One can only suggest it is to be done by ⌐ hook or by ⌐ crook.
Horrel-lorrel, ii. 91—a lorel or lorrel is = a worthless fellow—reduplicated by Harvey in his way.
Hodmandod, ii. 113 = a snail.
Holborne conduit, ii. 119.
Hosier Lane, ii. 119.
Hoising, ii. 133.
Howle-glasse, ii. 215.
Hose-on-head, ii. 245.
Horrisonant, ii. 275.
Homer, ii. 279, *et freq.*
Holla, ii. 285.
Holinshead, i. 37, 91; ii. 57, 290—in i. 91 should have been T.
Howard, Lord Henry, ii. 291.
Hourde = hoard, ii. 305.
Humors, humor, i. 25, 203.
Humorous, i. 204; ii. 277.
Humorists, i. 215.
Hudlid, i. 112 = huddled.
Hubbard, Mother, i. 164, 165, 205.
Humphrey, Duke, i. 206, 208—dine with, or be table-fellow with = not to dine at all, but to loiter at dinner-time near his (supposed) monument in Paul's.
Huffe-snuffes, i. 241 = a hectoring, bullying fellow. Cf. Nares, *s.v.*
Hugy, ii. 67.

Hurly-burly, ii. 128, 176, 195.
Humfry, Dr., ii. 157, 292.
Hugger-mugger, ii. 214 = in secrecy.
Huff, ruff, snuffe, ii. 217—significant names applied to the 'ruffians': cf. 'Huff-snuff.'
Humanitarian, ii. 227.
Huckstering, ii. 270 = bargaining.
Huffing, ii. 286 = scolding, or by use swaggering. Cf. 'Huff-snuff,' etc.
Hutton, Dr., ii. 291.
Hypocrase, i. 47 = a drink composed of wine, spices and sugar strained. See Nares, *s.v.*
Hypocrites, i. 261.
Hypocrise, ii. 296 (verb).

I.

I = ay, i. 207.
Icary = Icarus, i. 193.
Ideotisme, iii. 29.
If, and if, i. 260.
Ignatius-like, iii. 42.
Ilfauorited, i. 142.
Ile, ii. 7, 219.
Illumine, ii. 9.
Illuminate, ii. 135.
Immerito = Spenser, i. 5, 180, *et freq.*
Imputation, i. 70—a gird at the Puritan-evangelical doctrine of the 'imputation of Christ's righteousness' or merits.
Importune, i. 221.
Impounded, i. 267.
Imitation, i. 268.

Impudentest, ii. 34.
Imperfections, ii. 166.
Imprest, iii. 10—Harvey's English for *impressa*, a mot or motto.
Inameld, iii. 75, 78—in the former misspelled in original 'enamleld.'
Infectiue, i. 45 = infectious.
Infortunately, i. 118.
Innocent III., i. 119.
Incontinently, i. 141 = at once.
Incidently = incidentally, i. 153.
Interluding, i. 169.
Indifferent, -ly, i. 173, 176, 220; ii. 10, 127, 140 = impartial.
Indifference, i. 203, 221; ii. 140, 202, 318, 330 = impartiality.
Indefeasable, i. 191.
Inwardest, i. 194.
Interlaced, i. 195, 200, 244; ii. 100.
Inckhorne, witches, i. 204 = scribbling revilers, 'witches' being then used as =wizards or fem. witches; pads, i. 223—literally 'pads that sucked up the superfluous ink,' metaphorically = ink-wasters.
Inkhornisme, ii. 274, 275—another Nashe coinage = ink-wasting.
Inculpable, i. 211.
Injury, i. 237 (verb); ii. 292, 301, 313.
Intertrace, i. 241.
Intendiments, i. 264; ii. 7.
Insultes, i. 297 = triumphs, exults.
Intentions, ii. 59.

Intende, ii. 59 = to stretch towards—a Latinate sense preserved in 'intentions.'

Indistillation, ii. 79 = distillation, *i.e.* the extract distilled over.

Ingland, ii. 95.

Innovation, ii. 149.

Indulgentially, ii. 161.

Interluders, ii. 216.

Infancy, ii. 242.

Inamoratos, ii. 275.

Infamizers, ii. 276.

Inditement, ii. 276.

Infringement, ii. 276.

Inuect, iii. 20.

Indiuiduals, iii. 59.

Irish tricke, ii. 128.

Irefulnesse, ii. 276.

Isam, i. 171, 173—as shown elsewhere, the name of Greene's hostess and sick-nurse.

Itch = hitch, *i.e.*, to raise up and move a short distance, ii. 127.

I wis, i. 211; ii. 160, 194, 210, 227, 296 = I wish (too late).

J.

*** Some of the words herein are spelled with I for J, as was the mode.

Iack-sauce, ii. 328 = nickname for a saucy Jack.

Jack-mates, i. 73 = equal mates, as explained by the "Hayle," etc.

Iamye, Don, iii. 78—looks as if the lord's name were 'James.'

Jauell, ii. 114—query Tubal-cain?
James I. [VI. of Scotland], ii. 21, 102.
Jewell, Bp., i. 234; ii. 48.
Iest-dropsie, ii. 213—he ridiculously supposes that he will be ill (dropsied) from the biting jests made on him.
Jet, iii. 65.
Jetteth, ii. 313 = to go in and out with the legs wantonly [*i.e.* boastfully].—Cotgrave.
Jews, ii. 113, 178, 180, 181.
Jewes trumpe, ii. 146, 239 = Jews'-harp, and still so called, in Scotland at least.
Jewes eye, ii. 146, 241.
Jerkes, ii. 213.
Joineth, i. 149.
Jumpe, i. 119 = adv. equally; ii. 130 = verb agree.
Jybinge, i. 115.

K.

K. E. = Edward Kirke, i. 8. See *Spenser's Works* (Grosart), vol. iii., pp. cviii *seq.*; i. 8, 38, 59.
Kallowe = callow, i. 72.
Key-cold, i. 70—a key, from its metal coldness, was a usual remedy, dropped down the back, for bleeding of the nose.
Kelly, ii. 68, 69.
Kelke, Dr., ii. 191, 192.
Kett, i, 205, 294; ii. 167, 169, 176, *et freq.*
Kinde, ii. 229 = the special kind or nature.
Kindly kindly, i. 171; ii. 252, 257, 295 = of kin.
Kind-hart, ii. 263—query suggested by Chettle's 'Kind Hart's Dream,' 1592?

Killcowes, i. 204; ii. 18, 129, 195, 224 = redoubtable heroes (from Sir Guy of Warwick's exploit), but used burlesquely.

Kibe, i. 296 = a galled sore on the heel. There seems here to be a wretched quibble on bile = bill and bile = boil.

Kilprickes, Sir, ii. 88, 89 = chilpirics.

Kenols, Dr., ii. 90.

Kiffin, ii. 290—query Griffin? If the latter, his Poems will be found collected in Dr. Grosart's *Occasional Issues*.

Kitchin stuffe, ii. 230, 232.

Knit up = conclude, i. 60.

Knicknackes, i. 80.

Knaues, in grosse, ii. 34; a name, iii. 48—explained *s.v.* 'Grain.'

Knacking, iii. 16.

Kodpeased = cod-pieced, i. 84.

Kylgarran Forest, i. 129.

Kyon, iii. 56.

L.

Lads of the castell, i. 225. See under 'Castell.'

Lade, iii. 41.

Laid at her = kept at her, iii. 79.

Lamback'd, i. 183; ii. 210 = beat severely, as *Lam* signifies, whence it is compounded.

Lambacker, ii. 210.

Lammeswool, ii. 74 = a drink composed of ale and of the pulp of roasted apples.

Lambert, ii. 291.

Lambskin, ii. 210.

Lampsacens, ii. 249.
Larke, ii. 199 = the bird so known.
Lash, ii. 213 = to beat sharply.
Lashed, i. 214.
Lashing, i. 202.
Launcelot, i. 276; ii. 225.
Launcing, ii. 60 = lancing.
Laxatiue, i. 18, 65.
Lazarello, ii. 231.
Lasie-bones, ii. 283 = a lazy fellow.
Lauherne, M., ii. 292.
Letter monger, ii. 55.
Letters between Harvey and Spenser, i. 1 onward; published furtively, i. 180.
Letter, New, of Notable Contents, i. 255 onward.
Leifest = dearest, iii. 77; leifer, iii. 90.
Legendary, i. 170, 190.
Legs, drollery on, iii. 52 onward.
Lepanto, i. 264, 265; ii. 102.
Lest, iii. 79—query = least? or last?
Lewen, ii. 24, 83.
Levell, ii. 59 = aim at; levelling = laying level or true; 278 = aim at.
Levelleth, ii. 108, 233.
Leripups, ii. 78, 278 = *lirripoopa*—formerly tails attached to the hood of D.D. and of magistrates. See Nares, *s.v.*, and Du Cange. Here apparently=the knowledge enjoyed by such. Halliwell-Phillipps says it is also used for a silly fellow [by way of irony].
Letteth, ii. 141, 200 = hindereth.
Lesbian canons, ii. 147.

Lemnius, Doctour, ii. 252.
Lead, a little lumpe of, iii. 50.
Letters, iii. 82—an odd use of the plural where but one was meant.
Linne, i. 26, 187 ; ii. 143 =cease.
Liuelye, i. 27, 75 =life-like.
Listeth, i. 40, 140 =chooseth.
Ligge, i. 92 =lie.
Lightly, iii. 62 = usually.
Litely = lightly, i. 137.
Living =mode of life, i. 206.
Libbard = leopard =Nashe ? i. 270 ; ii. 211, 261.
Liberall sciences, iii. 46.
Liberallest, ii. 5.
Licentiousnesse, i. 200—*not* = sexual licentiousness.
Linke = torch, ii. 9.
Little-little, ii. 12 = very little.
Lilly, ii. 124, 125. See under ' Euphues,' etc.
Lilly, William, iii. 13.
Lillypot, ii. 219—a sort of pun upon Lyly.
Listers, Captain, ii. 221.
Licorise, ii. 254 = sweetness (because liquorice is sweet).
Linsy-woolsie, ii. 317 = a fabric of linen and wool, hence = mean or of unsuitable parts.
Like in, iii. 20 ; feele of a like = make trial of, iii. 76, 80 = looking for a trial of—fetched from the practice and phrase of 'going upon liking' = going upon trial, a sort of agreement often made between master and would-be man. At iii. 86 'weene of a like,' *i.e.* of one like a fool, meaning herself.

Lichfield, Richard, iii. 8, 13, 15.
Lingua, lingendo, ligando, iii. 20.
Liech = leech, *i.e.* physician, iii. 53.
Lincoln, Bishop of, iii. 63.
Lowte, i. 84; ii. 339.
Lob-assar duck, ii. 263.
Lobbelinus, ii. 41, 243—apparently a Latinization of Lobbel or Lobel = Lob, a clown.
Lockes, long, iii. 61.
Lop, in a chaine, iii. 43 = a flea (in Northern counties).
Lordship, reuerend, ii. 155.
Lords, spiritual, ii. 156.
Lordly, iii. 85 = as a lord, graciously.
Lucianist, i. 190.
Lucianicall, i. 166, 172.
Luciferian, ii. 166.
Lurdane, ii. 250 = a heavy, stupid, lazy fellow—from *lourd*, heavy, and *lourdin*, a heavy clown (French). See Nares, *s.v.* In Scotland it is equally applied to lazy, slovenly females. Cf. E. K.'s Glosse on Spenser's *Shepheard's Calendar*, *s.v.*
Lusher—qy. lasher? see *s.v.*, iii. 26, 27.
Lust, ii. 208.
Luste, i. 187.
Lusted, ii. 285.
Lycester = Lord, players, i. 125; ii. 84, Leicester.
Lyon-dragon, ii. 17.

M.

Madame-towne, ii. 267 = chief town, from use of 'Madam.'
Maligne, i. 9.

Malt, ii. 229.
Mammets, ii. 223 = puppets or dolls.
Mammet, Captaine, ii. 223—an epithet, not a name = Lyly as chief mammet or chief of the mammets or boy-actors.
Marry, i. 20, 23, 71, 103, *et frequenter* = sub-reference to Virgin Mary originally—here an exclamation.
Mashippe = mastership, i. 26.
Mayne sea = ocean, i. 59.
Maltworm = tippler, i. 72.
Magnificoes, i. 84; ii. 220.
Magnifically, ii. 261.
Matchable, i. 95; ii. 136.
Marble booke, i. 107 = book of lasting record.
Mallconceiued, i. 125.
Marchepane, i. 130, 163 = a mixture of sugar and almonds like our Macaroons. See Nares, *s.v.*
Maydenly excuses, i. 135.
Makeshift, i. 161, 189.
Martin Mar-prelate, i. 164, 252; ii. 49, 57, 121, 124 onward; 133 onward; 150 onward; 158 onward; 196 onward; 197, 205, *et freq.*
Malcontented, i. 164.
Malmesie, i. 170, 171 = Malmsey wine.
Martinish, and counter-Martin, i. 203.
Martinists, ii. 312.
Martin of the Vintry, ii. 177.
Madbraynest, i. 214.
Magni, ii. 188.
Magie, i. 229 = magic.
Main (adj.), i. 262.

Mainest, i. 275.
Main chance, i. 262; ii. 232.
Maine stroke, ii. 147.
Mahomet, i. 264, *et freq.*
Mating, i. 275—chess term.
Marmalad, i. 280.
Marlow, i. 289, 292, 296-7; ii. 115, 322.
Mariegod, iii. 94, 96 = Christ Jesus, *i.e.* God by Mary.
Marlowisme, ii. 234.
Marchant-venturer, ii. 45, 125, 306.
Magnes = magnet, ii. 104, 247—Latin form then in use; and I regret that I inserted the 't' in i. 249.
Madnesse, ii. 109.
Mandillion, ii. 130 = a loose hanging garment like a (long) jacket; but what was intended by 'ouer-cropped' Editor knoweth not.
Mammaday, ii. 130, 216—in the first reference a person, in the second not.
Marian, maide, ii. 229.
Maulkin, ii. 230 = malkin, a diminutive of 'Mary,' generally used in contempt. See *Coriolanus* ii. 1.
Malapertly, ii. 242, 280.
Massacrous, ii. 243.
Man a man, ii. 245—used by Nashe also.
Machaon, ii. 251.
Mad dogs, iii. 57-8.
Make-bate, ii. 272.
Magdalen's, Mary, Teares, ii. 291.
Mathew, Dr., ii. 292.
Margents, iii. 15, 16.
Meating = meeting, iii. 75.

Metaphysically, i. 57 = supernaturally.
Meteorologicians, i. 58.
Metaposcopus, i. 72 = seer of changes? "Error for 'Metaposcopus.' A diviner who judges of one's fate by his countenance. See Sueton., 'Tit.' viii. 2; also Holland's Pliny, ii. 539 D." (Mr. W. G. Stone, as before.)
Metaphisitian, iii. 22.
Meane = meantime, i. 173.
Mentery, i. 250 = lying (subst. formed from Latin verb *mentior*).
Meere-meere, i. 276 = merest, or very.
Message, i. 277.
Meacock, ii. 17, 49 = milksop or poor-hearted fellow.
Meat, in the mouth, carryeth, ii. 47 = carrieth nourishment.
Meat, cats and dogs, ii. 71, 72, 73, *et freq.*
Messalinists, ii. 91.
Medina, Peter de, ii. 97—a Spanish writer on navigation translated into English and French.
Mercator, mappe of, ii. 130.
Meokekim, ii. 180.
Methodists, ii. 181.
Mechanicall dealinges, ii. 194.
Megg, long, of Westminster, ii. 229.
Meridarpax, ii. 242 = μερις and αρπαξ = rapacious sharer.
Mendechmi, two, ii. 250—error for Menæchmei (comedy of Plautus).
Merle = marl, ii. 289.
Milkmaidelike, iii. 81.
Mirandola, i. 64.

Miserable = sorrowful, and more, i. 118.
Mildmay, Sir Walter, i. 182, 246; ii. 84.
'Mirror of Tuscanisme,' i. 183—a booklet by Harvey.
Mission, i. 197; ii. 121.
Minerall, i. 201.
Minions, ii. 7, 41, 46, 284.
Milksop, ii. 17, 49 = a fellow as soft as sopped milk, or as the child who eats it.
Militar, ii. 35.
Mingle-mangles, ii. 39 = a confused and incongruous mixture.
Misrule, lord of, ii. 127.
Mise = mice, ii. 242.
Mutchie goditch, iii. 96.
Miscreantest, ii. 271 = misbelievingest, and hence 'most wicked.'
Miscreant, iii. 10.
Morley, Professor Henry, i., x, xiii, xiv, xvii, xviii, xliii onward.
Most what, i. 16—a word opposed to 'somewhat' = chiefly.
Most-rough, i. 212.
Motus v. *metus terræ*, i. 46.
Mote-spying, i. 166; ii. 163.
'Mother Hubbard,' i. 205 = Spenser's poem, *not* the Nursery 'Mother Hubbard.'
Moates, i. 210.
Momentany, i. 262 = momentary.
More, Sir Thomas, ii. 46, 136, 244.
Mother pearle, ii. 51—now mother-of-pearl.
Moother-sea, ii. 182 = primary source.
Mounting, ii. 51 = rising or aspiring, as still used.

Moonshine, egges in, ii. 63 = flim-flams.
Modernistes, ii. 63.
Money, go for my, ii. 98 = for my choice.
Monomachies, ii. 101 = single combats.
Mowgh, ii. 224 = mow, make mouths.
Moone, Man in the, ii. 234; iii. 8.
Mockage, ii. 270.
Motts, ii. 307; iii. 16.
Moderatour, iii. 32.
Mucus snotte, iii. 27.
Mustachyoes, i. 116, 131 = moustache.
Mum, i. 134; ii. 302.
Mummer, ii. 312.
Musteringe, i. 168.
Mutes, i. 203.
Murr, i. 242; iii. 9—in Devon = mouse; a 'murre' is also a severe cold in the throat.
Muses, the, iii. 51-2.
Muske, i. 261.
Mutinous, ii. 20, 43, 262.
Muchgo-ditch-them, ii. 90 = much good do it them. Cp. *Timon of Athens*, i. 2.
Muck-hill, ii. 233 = dunghill.
Mulcaster, ii. 291.
Munday, ii. 290.

N.

N. H., ii. 114, 117, 119, 170, 176, 294.
Nashe, Thomas, i., ix, xv, xlv, xlvi, xlvii, xlix, l; 170, 206, 218, 273-89; ii. 23, 222, 269 onward; iii. 9 onward; caricature-portrait, iii. 43; life of, iii. 67 onward—*frequenter* incidentally.

Nash, whaten...iii. 33, 67.
Nashes S. Fame, ii. 10, 16, 25, 29, 31; ii. 81, 189, *et freq.* —from a phrase used by Nashe. See Nashe, *s.v.*
Nasherie, ii. 230, 234.
Na, i. 141; ii. 51, 71, 77, 78, *et freq.*
Namely, and, i. 117, 183; ii. 294; iii. 67.
Name, good, i. 167.
Nauarre, i. 295; ii. 15.
Nappy, i. 283.
Nappiest, ii. 51, 114 = strongest.
Naturalls, ii. 292, 293.
Napry, in suddes, ii. 301; iii. 16 = linen, table linen in the wash.
Naulum, iii. 27 = mediæval dog-Latin, like 'Upsee freeze super nagulum' = the thumb nail.
Ne, i. 253.
Neb, i. 186.
Neat, ii. 93, 174, 199, 218, 227.
Neatest, ii. 62, 184.
Neckverse, ii. 281; iii. 26 = the verse read by a malefactor to entitle him to benefit of clergy—generally Psalm li. 1. (Nares, *s.v.*)
Neronists, ii. 91 = like the (infamous) Nero.
Neerelyest, ii. 219.
Nephew, ii. 263.
Negotiations, ii. 274.
Neighbourly, ii. 277.
Neptunist, ii. 290.
Nectarize, i. 243.
Newfanglenesse, i. 191.
Newfangled, ii. 8, 275.
New-new, i. 233 = most new.

New-found Landes, ii. 36, 45, 176.
Newgate, ii. 8.
Nihilagents, i. 99.
Nifilles, i. 134, 136, 283 = trifles (Chaucer, etc.)
Nice, i. 249; ii. 158.
Nippitaty, i. 283; ii. 51, 54, 115. Cf. '*Summer's Last Will and Testament.*'
Nipping, ii. 59, 223—used in the double sense of (1) taunting or satirizing; (2) cheating.
Nine-hole nidgets, ii. 130—'Nidget' is in Kent, part of a plough. It also means a 'fool.' The whole phrase = the game either of Nine holes, or of Nine mens morris; on which see Nares, and especially Strutt.
Nouels, i. 191, 259, 270—in Italian sense = *novella*, a tale, noveltie, discourse, news (Florio).
Nouellets, i. 215.
Nouellists, ii. 208 = makers of new discourses and new ideas. Cf. 'Nouels.'
Nouice, i. 219.
Nöe de la, ii. 21, 104.
Nominate, ii. 9.
Norris, Sir John, i. 175; ii. 97.
Norman, Robert, ii. 97, 289.
Nosing, ii. 125.
Noyous, ii. 282 = noyful or full of annoyance.
Noddy, ii. 327 fool.
Nonproficients, i. 99.
Norton, ii. 291.
Numantine warre, ii. 135, 169.
Nullitie, ii. 176.
Nusled, ii. 189, 267 = nuzzled [*i.e.* nustled up close].

O.

Oblivion, law of, i. 276; moth of fame, iii. 50.
Occurrents, i. 138; ii. 11.
Occursiuly, i. 190; ii. 306 = occasionally, literally 'as one meets it.'
Occasion, ii. 309.
Occasionet, ii. 122 = small occasion.
Occupationer, ii. 290.
Oestridge = ostrich, ii. 236.
Oeconomer, ii. 257.
Oh-is, i. 234 = O yes (*oyez*) of the public crier.
Oisterwhore, ii. 345—a derisive term for an oysterwife, because of her abusive propensities (and worse).
Omnigatherum, i. 190—now 'omniumgatherum.'
Omni-sufficient, ii. 40, 46, 110, 138, 141.
Omniscious, ii. 70, 180 = all-knowing.
Omniscians, ii. 287.
Omnidexterity, ii. 299 = an intensitive form of ambidexterity or versatility.
On = one, i. 112 *et frequenter*: looks oddly in iii. 75 onward.
One, ii. 168.
Onely, i. 217.
Onion, teares of the, vpon the Theater, i. 292.
Oneale, John, i. 248.
Openest, ii. 77.
Opportunity, i. 262.
Opiniotiue, ii. 135.
Ortographie = orthography, i. 76.
Oratour, perfect, i. 291.
Orpheously, i. 245 = like Orpheus.

Orient, ii. 6 = bright, the east being the sun's rising place.
Ordure, ii. 115.
Orders, fower and twentie, ii. 130.
Oryx, iii. 58—a wild beast in Africa variously described. Cf. Pliny and Batman.
Ostisses, ii. 121 = hostesses.
Ostes = hosts, i. 145.
Otherwhyles, i. 28, 55; ii. 82, *et freq.*
Other = others, ii. 188, 189, *et freq.*
Ouen-mouth, ii. 231 = large or omniverous mouth.
Outlandishe, i. 123, 137.
Ouerbarish, i. 112.
Ouersensibely, i. 123.
Overstate, i. 130.
Ouershot, i. 164.
Ouer-prize, i. 165.
Ouer-fly, i. 179.
Ouer-read, i. 180.
Ouer-thwartes, i. 183, 215.
Ouer-mounting, i. 193.
Ouerpitteous, i. 193.
Ouerlightheaded, i. 200.
Ouerskippe, i. 219, 267.
Ouerwhirld, i. 295.
Ouerstumbling, ii. 25.
Ouership, ii. 48.
Ouercrowed, ii. 80, 235.
Ouerlashing, ii. 197.
Ouertreated, ii. 341 = treated or persuaded over or against my judgment.
Oxforde, Earl of, i. 183.

P.

Painefullest, ii. 36.
Pale = paling, iii. 76.
Paynefull = painstaking, i. 8.
Paulting = pelting or peddling, i. 62, 96, 116, 119, *et freq.*—qy. paltring, worthless trash?
Paultringe, ii. 98.
Paltrye, i. 163, 184; ii. 95 = subst. trifles.
Pallace, of Pleasure, ii. 100.
Panormitan, ii. 247.
Patcheries, i. 107.
Paionius, i. 119.
Painture, ii. 118.
Pancridge, ii. 210 = Pancras (St.).
Pandare, ii. 111.
Papp wyth a hatchet, i. 164; ii. 49, 121, 124 onward; 126 onward; 211, 213.
Painim, ii. 253, 276.
Parma, i. 175, 295.
Paramours, ii. 121.
Packe, of vanity, i. 201; ii. 256 = packman's bundle.
Packing, ii. 295 = thread or continuity of the discourse.
Packhorse, ii. 224.
Paniar, ii. 256.
Parlous, i. 138, 205; ii. 110, 128, 213, 246.
Paper-bugs, i. 223 = paper sprites or frighteners.
Paper-brabbing, i. 235.
Paper-sweat, ii. 213.
Parthenophil, i. 259; ii. 14, 22.
Parthenopæus, ii. 15.
Pamflet-marchants, i. 286.
Particular, i. 292.

Padd, i. 291; ii. 241, 294—the former foot-creepers or qy. deceivers? the last = deceit.
Paint, ii. 10.
Paranymphes, ii. 21.
Pasquils, ii. 43.
Patch, ii. 46 = fool.
Party, ii. 47.
Palmastry, ii. 70.
Pasquils, ii. 168.
Paradise, fooles, ii. 167.
Paradiseth, ii. 266.
Pappadocio, ii. 216, 222—as Braggadochio.
Patch-pannel, ii. 280 = one who is shabby or wears worn-out clothes.
Parbreake, ii. 284 = vomit.
Paragon, ii. 226.
Pay-home, ii. 295 = pay thoroughly in return.
Passionatest, ii. 340.
Patterne, iii. 10.
Parasitupocriticall, iii. 13 = compound of παρασιτος and ὑπογρισις.
Pantophainoudendeconticall, iii. 13.
Parergasticall, iii. 15.
Parkers = keepers of the park, iii. 48.
Pattins = pattens, the common name for clogs raised on an iron rim so as to keep the shoe out of the mire.
Pamphleters, iii. 67.
Partiality, ii. 46.
Passed = cared, iii. 77.
Pearson, William, elegy by, i., xvi.
Pederastice, i. 290.

Personage = person, i. 83.
Pennifathers, pinche fart, i. 204—Nashe uses the word in the singular ('P. P.,' p. 16). Either it was a phrase current, or = a miserly fellow, as is most probable.
Penny, S., i. 99; penny, ii. 194.
Pennyworth, i. 283; ii. 189.
Pedomancie, ii. 210 = discerning by the feet—one of Harvey's jocularities.
Petitory, i. 117.
Pester, ii. 262, 276, 280.
Pestred, ii. 226.
Peagooses, ii. 239 = a nickname—Harvey's joke on peacock.
Pennycoste = Pentecost, i. 126—evidently a jocular variation. Cf. context.
Petite, i. 131.
Perne, Dr., i. 73, 183, 194, 208; ii. 90, 294—317.
Pembrokes, i. 191.
Pembroke, Countess of, i. 267; ii. 100, 266.
Peccauies, i. 199.
Pelting, ii. 112.
Penia, i. 199.
Period, ii. 16.
Pestelenter, i. 204.
Percase, i. 233; ii. 6, 173, 299 = perchance.
Pen-scolding, i. 235.
Pen-powder, ii. 17.
Periwig, ii. 278.
Petrarch, ii. 92.
Petrarch, Inglishe, ii. 93.
Peckham, John, ii. 179.

Peterhouse, Cambridge, ii. 297.
Perpolike = polite, iii. 17.
Pheere, i. 129.
Phaer, i. 129.
Phantast, ii. 107 = a fantasy-monger or fantastic.
Phantasticallitye, i. 189; ii. 65.
Philippiques, i. 210.
Phy, i. 295; ii. 273, *et freq.*
Phah, ii. 118 = our interjection 'pah.'
Philip, Dr. Barth., ii. 187.
Pinne, i. 65.
Pickethankes, i. 71; ii. 272.
Picklocke, iii. 48.
Pickstrawes, i. 72.
Pickgoose, ii. 64.
Picker-deuant, ii. 252 = a beard cut to a point, V shape.
Pickpocket, ii. 272.
Pickpurse, ii. 272, 281.
Piperly, i. 168; ii. 113, 220, 280.
Pierce-Penni-lesse, i. 194; ii. 50.
Pierce's Supererogation, ii. 27 onward.
Pisces, iii. 53.
Pinche-fart Penny-fathers, i. 204.
Pinsons, i. 281 = pincers.
Pinching, ii. 180.
Pincheth, ii. 219.
Pibalde, ii. 219, 267.
Pidling, ii. 18, 49, 181.
Pike sawce, ii. 228 = abusive or thrusting sauciness: or query 'sound thrashing'?
Pikes, ii. 60.

Pight = pitched, placed, ii. 112.
Pilch, ii. 187.
Pistlepragmos, ii. 276.
Pilfryes, ii. 276.
Pinked, iii. 64 = adorned, or the like.
Pitch-branded = marked with pitch—as sheep are? ii. 317.
Placeboes, i. 88.
Plausible, i. 85 = applauded, 209; ii. 19, 25, 125, 156, 175, 326 = present use, ii. 249.
Platforme, i. 225, 247, 278; ii. 134, 174, 197, 285, 294 = plan.
Platformers, i. 223, 268; ii. 64, 186, 194, 199.
Placarde, ii. 19.
Pleade-it-out, ii. 42.
Play-munger, ii. 132.
Play-maker, ii. 215.
Players, i. 125.
Plant, man or, iii. 39, 40.
Pluckcrow, ii. 18.
Poesies = poetry, i. 34.
Poores = pores, i. 44.
Pottle, i. 47.
Pottypôsis, i. 48 = a would-be humorous word, pot, or pottle, ποσις (drink).
Pocket-vp, i. 166, 185, 222.
Poueretto, i. 206.
Polemechany, i. 230—from πολυς, many (here probably = varied), μηχανη, mechanism, contrivance.
Post ride, i. 259.
Pope, i. 262.
Pouerable, i. 263, 271; ii. 37, 106, 180, 239.

Poinado, ii. 211, 226 = poniard—origin of form seemingly unknown.
Popularly tyrannise, ii. 183.
Powles, i. 295, *et freq.*
Popiniay, ii. 8 = parrot.
Pott, ii. 17.
Postambles, ii. 24.
Point, ii. 44.
Points vntrust, iii. 88 = his tags untied or his trousers unbuttoned.
Pocke, ii. 52.
Poulcat, ii. 73, 273 = polecat.
Poudred, ii. 100.
Pollicy, ii. 141.
Polycletus, ii. 147.
Popular, ii. 188.
Potestats, ii. 194, 195.
Pontalais, M., ii. 223.
Powting, ii. 229, 246.
Podalirius, ii. 251.
Poogh = Puck? ii. 273. Here, perhaps, generical for a devil, spirit, etc.
Poppy, ii. 328.
Poly-pragmaticall, iii. 13.
Post-pendence, iii. 32—the allusion is evidently to 'wiping himself' with the nettle, the 'post' having reference to something 'behind.' This is a vulgarity even Nashe would hardly have been guilty of in print.
Pot verses, iii. 37—query pottery inscriptions? or more probably verses made under the influence of a pot of liquor, like Elderton's.

THE LIBRARY OF THE UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA

Pragmaticall, ii. 274, 275, 303 (noun).
Preston, i. 9.
Preiudice, i. 77, 189.
Predicamente, i. 170, 267; ii. 237.
Premeditate, i. 177.
Preposterous, i. 179.
President = precedent, i. 195, 265, *et freq.*
Preuenteth = anticipateth, i. 251.
Prostrate, i. 260.
Pretext, i. 261.
Prest, i. 262; ii. 9, 78.
Practised, i. 262; ii. 10.
Princock, i. 283; ii. 7 = a pert, forward youth.
Pretence, ii. 180.
Precursor of Pierce's Supererogation, ii. 1 onward.
Prank-vp, ii. 8.
Preiudicate, ii. 14, 135, 164.
Praise-mouing, ii. 19.
Precisians, ii. 49, 159, 163.
Primrose hill, ii. 110, 112, 220.
Presbiter, Iohn, ii. 146.
Pregnanter, ii. 157.
Prankest up, ii. 240.
Prouiditore, ii. 275—a Nashe word quoted and laughed at: Italian = provider, purveyor.
Prestigiously, ii. 315.
Precise, iii. 14.
Prayse, iii. 27.
Press hunters, iii. 67.
Prettely = craftily, iii. 80.
Proofe, reproofe, ii. 148.
Prouisoes, ii. 38.

Proverbs, proverbial sayings, etc., etc.

'Whiles the yron is hote, it is good striking,' i. 7.

'I am now tolde (in the Diuels name),' i. 11.

'Hunt the letter,' i. 18 = alliterate.

'Your hotte yron is so hotte that it striketh mee to the hearte,' i. 20.

'The Tyde tarryeth no manne,' *ibid.*

'Beggars, they saye, muste be no choosers,' *ibid.*

'A foote more than a lowce,' i. 21.

'A lame Gosling that draweth one legge after hir,' i. 35.

A lame Dogge that holdes vp one legge,' *ibid.*

'Why a Gods name,' i. 18, 35.

'Nothing in the world lesse,' i. 41.

'The Euill (in the diuels name)...i. 45.

'Rime nor Reason,' i. 46.

'All is not Gould that glistereth,' i. 47.

'Tell vs a trim goodly Tale of Robinhood,' *ibid.*

'Sawe farther in a Milstone than all the worlde besides,' i. 67.

'Iacke would fain be a Gentlemanne,' i. 70.

'Neither Barrell greatly better Herring,' i. 71.

'Vntil I haue a little better consulted with my pillowe,' i. 76.

'Their hand vpon their halfpenny,' i. 92 = consider whether to spend it profitably or no.

'There a straw, and you love me,' i. 107.

'A pigg of myne owne sowe,' i. 112=a thing of of my own invention.

'Bungled vpp in more haste then good speede,' i. 112.

'What lack ye Gentlemen?' and context, i. 113 =the then cry of 'prentices at their masters' doors.

'A plaster for a broakin pate,' i. 115.

'A vertu of necessity,' i. 116.

'Howe litle corne was shaken,' i. 126.

'Soe farr to seeke agayne,' i. 128.

'The burnte child dreadith the fire,' i. 134.

'Greatist Clarkes and not wisest men,' i. 137.

'One pointe onlye, where I layed a straw,' i. 140 = place where I laid a mark.

'Where the shooe pinchith us most, as the begger knoweth his dishe,' i. 145.

'The dead bite not,' i. 172.

'Comparisons they say are odious,' i. 192.

'We are already ouer shooes,' i. 194.

'I would wish the burned child not to forget the hot Element,' i. 199.

'The flying birde carried meate in the mouth,' i. 200.

'Without rime or reason,' i. 203.

'With a flea in their eare,' i. 204.

'A Lordes heart and a beggars purse,' i. 207.

'Diuers circumstances alter the case,' i. 213.

'Hath not shaken any suche corne,' i. 215.

'More haste then speed,' i. 222.

'As good neuer a whit . . . as neuer the better,' i. 230.

'The Diuell in the horologe,' i. 276.

'The Moonshine in the pudled water,' i. 283.

'Better a mischief then an inconvenience,' i. 284.

'The burned finger hath reason to startle from the fire,' i. 287.

'Driue out one naile with another,' ii. 13.

'Turne ouer a Volume of wronges with a wet finger,' ii. 32.

'Necessity hath as little free will, as Law,' ii. 35.

'Hee that will be made a sheepe, shall find wolues inough,' ii. 38.

'As dead as a dore naile,' ii. 71, 113—a door nail being dead in or flush with the wood.

'Her mother would neuer have sought her daughter in the Oouen,' etc., ii. 87.

'Roome was not reared-vpp in one day,' ii. 133.

'Blind men swallowe downe many flyes,' ii. 138.

'An vnkinde [= unkinned?] birde that defyleth his kinde neast,' ii. 166.

'Softer fier would make sweeter mault,' ii. 177.

'Graunt them an inche they will sone take an ell,' ii. 179.

'Zeale . . . fly from God's blessing into a warm Sunne,' ii. 207—query is 'God's blessing' = rain?

'Neuer a laye in the barrell, better herring,' ii. 217.

'Good . . . to be merry and wise,' ii. 247.

'Giue the asses head for the washing,' ii. 264.

'Warneth me armeth me,' ii. 305.

'The rauens croking looseth him many a fatt pray,' ii. 311.

'Pig in a poke,' iii. 95=making a bargain at a venture, or without knowing what is bought.

'Bore the sillie fellow in hand,' iii. 96 = to keep one politely in expectation. Cf. p. 86, l. 3.

'Thowht best to spur cutt,' iii. 97 = make more speed—a 'cut' is a horse generally, they ordinarily being 'curtals' or cut tails.

Punyes, i. 115; ii. 74, 175, 288—freshmen at Oxford were called 'Punies' of the first year.

Pseudography, i. 104.

Pumfrittes, M., i. 136.

Put case, i. 206.

Putatiue, i. 226, 230.

Punicall, ii. 175.

Putana, i. 290.

Puddle, ii. 12.

Puppy, ii. 46; iii. 13; blind, iii. 60.

Pumps and pantoffles, ii. 81.

Pudding-pittes, ii. 116—query = pudding-prickes, or the skewers that close the pudding-cloth?

Pumpe, ii. 214.

Purple fish, iii. 20.

Pynche, iii. 24.

Pyromachy, ii. 66.

Q.

Quadruplicatus, ii. 112.

Quarrier, i. 144—apparently the comparative of quarry = fat, corpulent.

Quarrelous, i. 165; ii. 37, 43.

Quauer, ii. 224.

Quaime, ii. 279.

Quantities, Spenser's false, i. 100, 101 and onward.

Queenehith, ii. 40.

Queene Mother, i. 69 = Kath. di' Medici.
Queasye, i. 130, 191.
Queint, ii. 8, 33, 90, 125, 194, 211, 261, 278, 282, 310, 314; iii. 7, 38, 39.
Queintly, ii. 296.
Quean, ii. 61.
Quickscented, ii. 114.
Quidditie, i. 46—generally subtleties, but here seemingly 'whatnesses.'
Quippinge, i. 115; ii. 107.
Quippe, etc., 160, 205, 222, 250 = gird or sharp retort.
Quiuer, ii. 98.
Quinquagenarian, ii. 143.
Quittance, cry, iii. 50.

R.

Rabblement, ii. 275.
Rakehell, i. 161, 215, 251; ii. 34, 84, 113, 271, 324, *et freq.*
Raye, M., ii. 205.
Rauen, white, i. 203; rauens, ii. 20.
Rabelays = Rabelais, i. 205, 218, 272.
Rascallie, iii. 21.
Rascallest, i. 207.
Rascality, i. 210.
Rascall, ii. 35, 270.
Rapping, i. 225.
Raines = reins, i. 260.
Raunging, i. 288.
Railipotent, ii. 17.
Rattle, ii. 44.
Raleigh, ii. 96.
Rampe, ii. 229.

Ramping, ii. 119.
Ragamuffin, ii. 222.
Rannell, ii. 229 (cant) = whore.
Rampalion, ii. 229.
Ramme-alley, ii. 230, 231, 246, 345.
Rank-minded, ii. 230.
Rattes-bane, ii. 293.
Ranker, iii. 21 = rancour: but query misprint for 'canker'?
Rash, Sir, ii. 339.
Rauened, iii. 56.
Reacquite, i. 159; ii. 15, 22, 119, 326.
Reason, nor rhyme, ii. 48.
Reane = rein, curb, ii. 135.
Realmes = reams, ii. 213, 219.
Reastie = rusty, ii. 231 = rancid, musty.
Resolution, i. 6; ii. 291.
Regimente, i. 145, 150; ii. 136, 137, 147, 153 = rule.
Reuerence, Sir, i. 171; ii. 270—a prefix to something indecorous.
Relent, i. 226; ii. 157.
Reshining, i. 245.
Remonstrances to the Duke de Maine, i. 260.
Resplendishing, i. 268; ii. 281, 329.
Resplendentest, ii. 266.
Respectiue, ii. 10, 19, 139, 160, 270, 291, 312, 321.
Renowned, ii. 41.
Reuell-rout, ii. 128.
Reconciliation, ii. 161-2.
Retaliados, ii. 177, 178.
Regrated, ii. 263 = retailed.
Repulse = refusal, ii. 289.

Reinolds (*i.e.* Rainolds), Dr. John, ii. 291.
Recumbentibus, ii. 302—meaning that he fenced lying down.
Remember = remind, iii. 14.
Rent-foorth, iii. 25.
Rife = frequent, i. 53.
Ritche = Lord Rich, i. 125 ; ii. 290.
Right-Olympicall, i. 218.
Riffe-raffe, ii. 65.
Riccolonus, ii. 66.
Ripp, ripp, ii. 230—a Nashe phrase = ill-conditioned person ? or = be violent, chide ?
Richardo, Don, de Medico, iii. 3.
Ropemaker, i., x, xi.
Rosalind (Spenser's), i. 6, 81.
Rogers, Daniel, i. 107 ; ii. 83.
Robin-good-fellow, i. 161 ; ii. 53.
Robin Hoodes Library, ii. 53.
Roscius, i. 201.
Roister, ii. 127.
Roister-doister, i. 214 ; ii. 127, 131, 221.
Roisterly, i. 169; ii. 116, 128, 198, 270.
Round = full, i. 197.
Rondelet, i. 280.
Roome = Rome, i. 295 ; ii. 22, 79, 133, 181, 182, 261, 343.
Rodomont, Sir, i. 296; ii. 225.
Roundly, ii. 131 ; iii. 15, 53.
Roinish, ii. 229 = mangy, scabby, and hence vile, etc.
Rough-hewne, ii. 300.
Rod, in lye, ii. 327.
Roddes in pisse = pickle ? iii. 34.

Rubbes, ii. 76.
Ruffian, in folio, ii. 44; ruffian divine, ii. 268.
Ruffianly haire, etc., i. 168, 169, 288; ii. 124, 128, 204.
Ruffianisme, ii. 218.
Ruffianish, ii. 221.
Running, i. 187, 272; ii. 43.
Ruffler, ii. 127 = a swaggerer or bully.
Ruffe, i. 199.
Rufling, ii. 122, 198.
Ruth, i. 251.
Rubarbe, i. 260.
Rupertus, i. 269.
Ruffle, i. 292.
Rudhuddibras, ii. 117.
Rule, to, ii. 192.
Rusty-dusty, ii. 246, 289.
Ruinated, ii. 306.
Rydge, M., i. 133.

S.

Sad = serious or grave, i. 40.
Satyriall, i. 83.
Sanguine, i. 164, 296.
Sancebell, i. 217—the sanctus or small bell that called to prayers.
Sackeuill, Sir William, i. 246.
Sampson's post, i. 262.
Saunders, i. 294.
Sanedrist, ii. 179 = error for Synedrist?
Satterday witt, ii. 229.
Saturnists, i. 181; ii. 262.
Satchell, fox's, ii. 297.

Sack-sopt, ii. 345.
Said of, iii. 5.
Satirist, stirring, iii. 63-4.
Scoggin, i. 104, 165, 205; ii. 32, 71, 109, 126, 132, 215, 247.
Scogginist, ii. 53.
Scogginisme, ii. 234.
Scott, E. J., Esq., M.A., i., ix, x.
School of Abuse, i. 8 (Gosson's).
Scarabe, ii. 251 = beetle, 252.
Scaming = scanning? i. 118 (see p. 133, l. 2 from bottom)—to 'scame' is to hurt or injure.
Scot-free, i. 163; ii. 210.
Scammony, i. 260.
Sconce = skull, i. 283.
Scanderbegging, i. 296.
Scoldes, hee and shee, ii. 42.
Scab, ii. 46.
Scourge, ii. 56.
Scarre-crowed = made a scare-crow, ii. 124.
Scantly, ii. 206, 207, 243.
Scarborough warning, ii. 225, 305—no warning, or a very brief one.
Scrat, ii. 266.
Scrattops, ii. 230.
Schoolebutter, ii. 231.
Schollerisme, ii. 275.
Scottes 'Witchcraft,' ii. 291.
Scabbed, iii. 25.
Scalde, iii. 25.
Scrupulous, ii. 141.
Senarie, i. 21, 22.

Sende = accompany, iii. 87.
Secretaries, of Nature, i. 49.
Secretary-ship, ii. 41.
Sena, i. 260.
Septentrionall, ii. 96.
Securis, John, ii. 131.
Seeke, are to, ii. 138, 285.
Serpentine, ii. 20—gunpowder not corned or granulated, but flour-like, and therefore more quickly kindled and quickly out, and so weaker.
Seniorise, ii. 152.
Servetus, ii. 164.
Sectaries, ii. 226.
Sea-horse, ii. 251.
Sergeant, six footed, ii. 252.
Shymeirs, i. 70—a name.
Shifters, i. 168; ii. 262, 346.
Shorditch, i. 169.
Sheep-biter, i. 199, (cant for) thief.
Shrewdly, i. 205.
Shot, maine, i. 205=large or cannon shot.
Shott, small, ii. 46.
Shotten herring, ii. 130.
'Shores Wife,' i. 259; ii. 14.
Shrimpe, ii. 46.
Sheare, ii. 105.
Shrouing, ii. 115.
Sharked, ii. 130.
Shifted = managed, *i.e.* successfully, iii. 88.
Shipman's hose, ii. 191.
Sheepe's-eye, ii. 228.
Short, or long, ii. 241.

Shittle = shuttle, ii. 270.
Shimmering, ii. 286, 329.
Shute, John, ii. 289.
Shakerley, booted, ii. 322.
Shaddow, iii. 6.
Shalbe, iii. 51.
Shepheardes Calendar, i. 90.
Shoes, old, iii. 53—renowned Tom Coryat hung up his far-travelled 'shoes' in his parish church, where they were seen within living memories.
Sidney, Sir Philip, i., xxxvii onward; xli onward; 7, 8, 9, 17, 36, 75, 76, 86, 182, 210, 217, 234, 246, 266; ii. 21, 23, 50, 67, 84, 99, 100, 101, 102, 254.
Singular = individual, i. 56, 228.
Singularities, ii. 7, 119.
Singularyeth, ii. 111.
Sibbe = related or allied, i. 71, 124, 275; ii. 301.
Sirra, i. 99; iii. 43.
Simple, ii. 45; ii. 197 = simple (simplie).
Simplicity, i. 166, 178; iii. 64.
Sirenized, i. 212.
Six and seauen, i. 239.
Sithence, ii. 10, 20, 96.
Sinnes, seauen deadly, ii. 90.
Sillogistrie, ii. 276.
Sith, ii. 191.
Sinckanter, iii. 41 = a worn-out old person.
Skelton, i. 165, 172; ii. 109, 132.
Skill, i. 77, 196; iii. 66.
Sky-coloured, i. 266.
Skummer, ii. 167.
Slaughterdome, i. 165.

Slaumpaump, i. 282; ii. 277—to smear in Leicestershire is to 'slaump.'
Slicke, ii. 59.
Slickerly, Rash-swash, i. 295, 296.
Slasher, ii. 57.
Sluttish, ii. 252.
Slug-plum, ii. 283, 323.
Sleeve, ragged, pulled, i. 207.
Smith, Henry, ii. 292.
Smith, Sir Thomas, i., xii, xxv onward; 76, 241, 246; ii. 84, 313.
Smith, Thomas, i. 184.
Smoother, iii. 28.
Smirking, ii. 7, 63.
Smugg, ii. 59, 296; smuggest, ii. 63.
Smithfield, ii. 246.
Smoothing, ii. 296.
Snaile, i. 259.
Snip-snapping, ii. 313, 338; iii. 72.
Snibb, ii. 119.
Snuffe in, ii. 76.
Sniuell, ii. 238.
Snudges, ii. 254.
Snout-horned, ii. 302.
Solempne, i. 22.
Sophister, i. 26; ii. 42.
Southwark, i. 169.
Sommer, Will, i. 193; ii. 132, 230.
Sophistication, i. 261; ii. 262.
Sonnet, the, i. 270.
Sottishly, ii. 7.
Sowters, ii. 43 = cobblers or shoemakers.

Somedeale, ii. 81.
Socket-worne, ii. 119.
Sosias, two, ii. 250.
Sodomies, ii. 271.
Southwell, Robert, ii. 291—one is thankful for even this slight recognition of this "sweet Singer." The poem named has the date 1594 on its first publication; but Harvey must have seen it in 1593.
Sokingly, ii. 63.
Sober-moode, ii. 295.
Span newe, i. 70, 113.
Spanyard, i. 175.
Spanish industry, i. 192.
Spanish Counsellour, ii. 14.
Spurgall, i. 205.
Spin-up, ii. 252.
Spowte, ii. 44.
Spagirique, ii. 70, 251.
Spenser, Edmund, i., x, xiii, xxiv, xlv, l; 1 onward; new poems, 8, 37, 38, 39, 67, 68, 91, 93, 212, 217, 234, 252, 266; ii. 15, 24, 50, 83.
Spring-tooth, ii. 265.
Spritish, ii. 272.
Spittle, procter of the, iii. 70.
Spittleman, ii. 283.
Spider, iii. 60.
Springing wit = youthful, i. 219.
Springals, i. 235.
Squaimishe = squeamish, i. 77.
Squeamish, ii. 158.
Squibbing, i. 80.
Squattering, i. 282.

Squire = square, ii. 311.
Still, i. 9, 63; ii. 292.
Stale, i. 189, 201; ii. 228.
Stowte, i. 84.
Stirbridge = Stourbridge, i. 113, 116.
Steeke, i. 113, 120, 129.
Starte-upp, i. 125; ii. 313.
Stomachous, i. 179, 262; stomachious, ii. 197.
Stanihurst, i. 182, 218; ii. 290.
Stratagematically, i. 211.
Stilliarde, i. 283; ii. 313, 345.
Stingers, ii. 226.
Styng, ii. 41.
Stepp-Tully, ii. 74—he means the person who adopted Tully's name—probably himself—not, as it ought to mean, the person adopted by Tully.
Storer, *i.e.* recipient and storer, iii. 96.
Stukely, ii. 146.
St. Dunston's tongue, i. 281.
St. Faithes under Paules, ii. 200.
Strokes, flat, ii. 232.
Sty, ii. 234.
Staring and starkblinde, ii. 235.
Starke-madd, ii. 235.
Starkest, ii. 280.
Stubs, Philip, ii. 280, 291.
Stowe, ii. 290.
Stocke, iii. 40.
Stigmaticall = burned with a hot iron, iii. 41.
Stackered, iii. 57.
Straw, lay a = to mark a bit to be thought of: here = an obstacle, iii. 86.

Supplicamusis = prayers and promises; Latin *supplicamus*.
Super-hartie = heartfelt, i. 1.
Super-eloquent, ii. 253.
Super-happy, ii. 170.
Super-domineering, ii. 17.
Suruiewe = survey, i. 24, 106; ii. 60.
Surmounting, i. 202, 290; ii. 10, 55, 65, 254.
Subboscoes, i. 116, 131—a coinage of Harvey from Italian *bosco* = wood, forest, and used apparently for 'underwood' in metaphorical sense = whiskers.
Suadas, i. 242, 266; ii. 276.
Sundaie supper, iii. 75—metaphorical.
Suttelest, i. 263.
Superficies, ii. 214.
Sucket, i. 280.
Suddes, i. 281.
Surquedry, i. 291, 297.
Suffenus, ii. 7, 222. See 'Shakerley.'
Sufficiencies, ii. 8.
Supposals, ii. 87.
Surquidrous, ii. 101.
Sublimed, ii. 147.
Sugerloafe, ii. 216.
Sugar-candy, ii. 254.
Sutcliffe, ii. 216.
Superrants, iii. 69.
Subtercubants, iii 69.
Swash, i. 284; ii. 18, 327.
Swash-pen, ii. 243.
Swasher, ii. 21.

Swashbuckler, ii. 44.
Sweet, ii. 19, 83, 107, 113, 161, 174, 341.
Swayed, ii. 46.
Sweepe-stake, ii. 111.
Swill-boule, ii. 218.
Swapped-down, ii. 231.
Swad, ii. 237, 287.
Swaddish, ii. 273.
Swash, Sir, ii. 339.
Swish-swash, ii. 339.
Syncopes, i. 21.
Sysseck in Croatia, i. 260, 264.
Sycophant, ii. 37, 38, 77.
Synedrion, ii. 142, 177 = a council, *συνεδριον*.

T.

Taking on, i. 41 = wrangling (as before said), getting into a passion.
Tani, i. 105.
Tarreeres, i. 118 = loiterings?
Tarleton, i. 125, 167, 194, 195, 201, 202, 203, 217 ii. 77, 115, 216, 234, 325.
Tarletonizing, i. 168, 202.
Table-fellow, i. 208.
Table-philosophy, ii. 34.
Talion, law of, i. 276.
Tang, i. 285; ii. 90 = savour, generally acrid.
Tamberlane, i. 195, 297.
Tache, ii. 80.
Tacke, ii. 232.
Tartaret, ii. 114.
Tales of a tubb, ii. 129, 213.

Tagg, and ragg, ii. 190.
Talaria, ii. 253.
Tautologies, ii. 282.
Talentes = talons, iii. 20.
Tempering, i. 66.
Tell tale, i. 120.
Temporize, i. 124.
Testerne, cracked, i. 128.
Teene, i. 285 = sorrow, anger.
Terme, i. 286.
Tempany, i. 297 = tympany.
Temperatest, ii. 12, 25.
Termagant, ii. 46.
Terribility, ii. 105.
Tee-heegh = laughter, ii. 273.
Testiuenesse, ii. 298.
Tediousnes, iii. 7.
Terminus et non terminus, iii. 67.
Three halfepenny fellowes, i. 67.
Theoricks, i. 130, 268; ii. 205.
Thrasonicall, i. 168; ii. 119.
Thundersmith, i. 206.
Thrise-grace-full, i. 244.
Thrise-curteous, thrise-sweet, ii. 5.
Thinke long, i. 249.
Thummed, kindly, i. 283.
Thorius, John, ii. 5, 24, 25, 335, 336, 341, 342, 343, 344.
Thunderbolteth, ii. 17.
Thunderblasing, ii. 252.
Thunder-lightning, ii. 20.
Throssher = thresher? ii. 55.
Theurgy, ii. 90.

Thwack-coate lane, ii. 126, 217.
Thalmud, ii. 148.
Thomas, Syr, of Carleton, anecdote of, iii. 34 = a clergyman.
Tickle, ii. 57, 152.
Tittles, i. 25 = trifles; 182 (tittle).
Tidy, ii. 40.
Tidely, i. 259.
Tinsell, i. 279; ii. 321.
Tinkerly, ii. 128, 280.
Tinkering, ii. 164.
Tittle-tattle, ii. 209.
Tisiphone, ii. 231.
Tite-tute-tate, ii. 276.
Toaby, iii. 25.
Toade, swolen, i. 291.
Toade-stoole, ii. 273.
Tobacco, i. 261; ii. 177 ('divine').
Tomboy, ii. 229.
Tom Penniles, ii. 121.
Tom Tooley, i. 69.
Tom Trothe, i. 83.
Tongue, iii. 19, 20, 60, 61.
Tongue, English, i. 266.
Tosspot, i. 282; ii. 218, 345.
Tost, a hot, ii. 173.
Tonosconcoleros, ii. 88—a name (petitions).
Topsy-turvy, ii. 131, 176.
Too-too-malapert, ii. 151.
Topp-gallant, ii. 236.
Too-saucie, ii. 250.
Touch, i. 167.

Toward, ii. 20.
Towardest, i. 225.
Toy, second, i. 189—the first was he who played W. Summers in *Summer's Last Will and Testament.*
Toyes = trifles, i. 16, 189.
Toyishe, ii. 220.
Toying = trifling, i. 36.
Torpedo, iii. 41.
Treaties, i. 32; ii. 274.
Truely, by my, i. 42, 46.
Trust-me-trulye, M., i. 128.
Traine, i. 209.
Trained = disciplined, i. 166; ii. 172.
Trainement, i. 277, 279.
Triobular, i. 190 = three-halfpenny.
Truce, i. 260, 261.
Treacle, i. 278.
Tricksie, ii. 8.
Tricksier, ii. 40; tricksiest, ii. 218.
Trontes, ii. 17.
Truculentall, ii. 18.
Trim-tramme, ii. 218.
Trimmest, ii. 46.
Trimming, of Thomas Nashe, iii. 1 onward.
Trauers, ii. 48, 152.
Trigons, ii. 70, 303.
Trounce, ii. 71, 272.
Trumpington ford, ii. 90.
Triplication, ii. 112.
Triplicity, ii. 303.
Transcripting, ii. 123.
Trish-trash, ii. 218, 339.

Trusse, ii. 220.
Truthable, ii. 276.
Trey, ii. 316.
Trochilus, iii. 22.
Transmigration, iii. 24.
Trussed up, iii. 28.
Trapped creatures, iii. 48.
Trapperd, iii. 56.
Turled, ii. 150 = twirled?
Turlers, i. 26—a proper name.
Turlery-ginkes, ii. 246 = twirling and 'jinks,' = thoughtless merriment.
Turke, i. 262, 263, 264.
Tuscanisme, ii. 19, 51.
Tuck, i. 282.
Turnecoate, i. 288; ii. 316.
Tusser, ii. 273.
Tutt, ii. 273.
Tumbler, ii. 283.
Twitched, ii. 122, 246 ('twitch').
Twigging, ii. 129—either = a knowing Sophister or = a beating S.—for it has both senses.
Twanged, ii. 212.
Tyhying = tee-heeing, or exclaiming 'tee-hee,' i. 61. See under 'Tee-heegh.'
Tyranise, ii. 155.

U.

*** Spelled with 'v' for 'u' in many cases.

Umphrye, i. 126.
Unable, iii. 35.
Unappeasable, ii. 252.

Unbutton, ii. 124.
Unconuersable, ii. 275.
Uncouth, i. 242.
Undauntable, ii. 112.
Unexilable, ii. 275.
Undecency, ii. 291.
Underhill, Dr., ii. 292.
Undecent, i. 135.
Under, iii. 51.
Underlie, i. 176; ii. 9.
Undiscreete, i. 180.
Unfriendly, i. 111.
Ungentle, i. 210.
Unguent, ii. 80.
Uniformitie, ii. 160.
Unhandsoming, ii. 276
Unhonest, i. 135.
Unlace, ii. 124.
Unnoble, i. 210; ii. 98.
Unicorne, i. 223.
Unlectured, ii. 289.
Unpartially, i. 177.
Unpossible, i. 116.
Unrecurable, iii. 24.
Unsensible = insensible, i. 54.
Unsufficient, i. 141.
Untrust, iii. 50 = untagged or unbuttoned; or not trussed.
Untrusse, i. 202.
Unpartially, ii. 8.
Unsatisfiable, ii. 8.
Unmatchable, ii. 19

Unpolished, ii. 25.
Unlaunced, ii. 65.
Unico, ii. 223.
Unworth, i. 190; ii. 224.
Unlineall, ii. 276.
Upholster, ii. 237.
Upsy-downe, ii. 145.
Urcheon, ii. 46, 239.
Urring tanye, iii. 75—an apparent misprint or misreading of the MS., but the Editor can't elucidate.
Urany, ii. 17.
Ursa major *v.* minor, iii. 67.
Usance, ii. 310.
Utopian, leather suits, iii. 65.
Uttering = publishing, i. 6.

V.

VV double, ii. 131, 209, 211, 216, 217 = Lyly.
Vallanger, M., i. 100.
Vawsis, i. 125—apparently = 'company of players,' but more the Editor knoweth not.
Vanity, i. 166.
Valiancy, i. 263; ii. 105.
Valiantest, ii. 100.
Validity, i. 290.
Vacantest, ii. 16.
Varlets, ii. 340; iii. 68.
Vagation = wandering about, iii. 53.
Venterously, i. 22 = venturously, boldly.
Veale = veil, i. 36; ii. 161.
Ventes = openings, i. 44.
Vengibly = vengefully, i. 49; ii. 77, 87, 115, 129.

Vengeablest, ii. 231.
Verdit = verdict, i. 60.
Verlayes, i. 111—Fr. *virelay*, a round or rondeau.
Venetias, i. 128.
Venetian State, i. 264.
Ventositye, i. 261.
Verdure, ii. 102, 115.
Verifiable, ii. 116.
Verticall, starre, ii. 266.
Vendiblest, ii. 312.
Vice, i. 189.
Vice-master of Paules, ii. 212.
Victorye, i. 136.
Vie, ii. 128.
Villan, ii. 319.
Virginall, i. 266.
Vises = vices? iii. 17.
Viperous, ii. 20, 37, 38.
Voluntarile, i. 113.
Voutesafe, i. 116, 118, 181, 238; ii. 15.
Vulcanist, ii. 177.
Vulgarly, ii. 275.

W.

Watson, Thomas, i. 22, 23, 112, 218; ii. 83, 171, 290.
Warwick's players, i. 125.
Wainscot, faced, ii. 229; forehead, ii. 117; indentures of, ii. 236.
Walsingham, i. 246.
Walladay, i. 282.
Washeth, one hand another, i. 269.
Warrantise, i. 285.

Water, ii. 209.
Waiment, i. 296.
Water, dry, ii. 69.
Waged, ii. 98.
Waites, ii. 99.
Warlie, ii. 104 = adj. from 'war,' here = war (horse).
Walles, painted, ii. 173.
Wakefield, ii. 215, 216.
Waspe, ii. 233.
Warner, ii. 290.
Warden, ii. 308 = a special kind of pear.
Wastage, iii. 27.
Well-willer = well-wisher.
Wellaway, i. 264.
Well, in Idumea, i. 271.
Weeneth, ii. 125.
White, i. 65.
Whole = hole, i. 138.
Whetstone, clerks of, i. 165 ; ii. 211, 215 ; iii. 17 = liars.
Whetstone, George, ii. 290.
Whitgift, i. 234 ; ii. 291.
Whood = hood, i. 241.
Whot, i. 143 ; ii. 92 = hot.
Whottest, ii. 47, 178.
Whitest white, i. 244.
Whitled, i. 282 = cut down (with a knife)—now an Americanism.
Whitling, ii. 90.
Whurlewinde, ii. 17.
Whiteliuer'd, ii. 17.
Whimwhams, ii. 44 = trifles or triflers.
Whitches, ii. 48.

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA

Whatchicaltes, ii. 57, 194—what-do-ye-calls?
Whipsters, ii. 63.
What is what, ii. 116.
Whoodwinked = hoodwinked, ii. 135. See under 'Whood.'
Whoop-hod, ii. 273.
Whist, whuist, ii. 79, 89, 278 = whist, be silent.
Whenas, iii. 52.
What = that, iii. 53.
Wilton, Rev. Richard, M.A., i., xviii.
Wilson, comedian, i. 125; ii. 24; secretary, i. 182; ii. 84.
Williamson, M., i. 128.
Wis, i. 182.
Wiste, i. 137.
Wise man, ii. 47.
Williams, Sir Roger, ii. 99.
Wilding tree, ii. 110 = crab-apple tree.
Withie, ii. 110.
Withernam, ii. 126, 217.
Wisp, ii. 230, 240.
Wispen, ii. 229.
Winch, ii. 239, 246.
Wickham, M., ii. 292.
Wisedome, ii. 309.
Wit, a good—defined, iii. 33.
Wood, Anthony a-, i., xi, xii, xiv.
Wood, John, i., xxviii, xxix.
Worshipful, i., xlv, 5.
Would, i. 76; ii. 143, *et freq.* = should.
Wolfe's print = a drastic reference to Wolfe the publisher, i. 236.

Wolfe, John, i. 259.
Word, last, ii. 43.
Woonderments, ii. 60.
Woonder-clout, ii. 270, 339.
Woodcocke, ii. 125.
Woolner, ii. 231.
Worme, loouing, ii. 247.
Worme, in dog's tongue, iii. 57—really a thin tendon.
Wrigleth, ii. 52.
Wretcheckes, i. 148—according to Gifford 'wretch-chocks' are the smallest of a brood of domestic chickens. This suits the text.
Wrinch, ii. 115, 167.
Wring, ii. 151.
Wutton, Sir Henry, Wotton, i. 72.
Wythipole, i. 20 (a name).

X.

Xenophon, Inglish, ii. 99.
Xenophontian, ii. 99.

Y.

Yarking, ii. 44 = beating or kicking.
Yer = ere, i. 174.
Yerbe, ii. 44 = jerk or beat.
Yl-willers, i. 6.
Young, Dr., bp. of Rochester, i., xiii.; ii. 84, 291.
Yonker, i. 192.
Yonkerly = youthful, i. 24, 26, 99; ii. 196.
Younkers, ii. 207.
Ypocrase, i. 278; ii. 246, 265 = hippocras—a drink of wine, spices, and sugar.
Ywisse, i. 23, 73. See under 'I wis.'

Z.

Zeale, ii. 174, 340.
Zelotists, ii. 173.
Zuingers, i. 26,—qu. Zwingli ?

CHIEF POINTS IN 'MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL.'

*** The quotations from Harvey, etc., have already been incorporated in the Glossarial-Index.

Broad verdict on Life and Writings of Harvey, iii., vii.

1. *On the 'dead'* GREENE, iii., vii-xii.—Aggravation of malignancy and infamy of attacks specially illustrated by references to the deceased Author's last letter, vii-ix; "Epitaphes and Funerall Deuotions" published by Harvey, ix; balanced sentences of reiterated scandals and gossip, x; allegations of obscenity falsified by Greene's books, xi; self-ignorance and sanctimoniousness suggestive of 'reproof' in *Measure for Measure*, xi; his "superior airs" preposterous, xii.

2. *On the 'dead'* MARLOWE, iii., xii-xvi.—No recognition of his genius, xii; Mr. A. H. Bullen on Harvey's *Newe Letter*, and supposed death of Marlowe by the Plague, xii-xiv; commentary on the 'Sonet' and 'Glosse,' xv; Marlowe's ridicule of the Harveys, xv-xvi; sneers at Marlowe's (mythical) irreligion and debauchery, xvi; his tragic end told (probably) with untrue accretions, xv; no wonder Shakespeare is left unnamed by Harvey, xvi.

3. *On the 'dead'* PERNE, iii., xvi-xviii.—A long-forgotten name, yet to be recalled as exemplifying

Harvey's cowardice added to his malignancy, xvi; dates, xvi; intended posthumous revenge (foot-note), xvii; extraordinary word-portrait of the Dean, Harvey's most able literary achievement, xviii; none the less his rancour and uncharity neutralized all powers and possibilities, xviii.

4. *The 'living'* NASHE, iii., xix-xxiii.—A Roland for an Oliver, xix; Nashe's offer of reconciliation rejected, xix; ludicrous 'contempt' for Nashe, xix-xx; Harvey's adaptations from and references to Nashe words and phraseology, xix-xx; Nashe's gossip-data not denied, xxi; Nashe words, xxi; Mercy Harvey's story—corrections of mistakes, and verdict, xxi-iii.

5. The COUNTESS OF PEMBROKE, iii., xxiii-xxiv.—References under 'Gentlewoman' and 'Pembroke' prove Harvey's fore-announced 'Defender' to have been "Sidney's sister, Pembroke's mother," xxiii; Queen Elizabeth the "one" always excepted, xxiii-iv.

Certain *memorabilia*, but the broad verdict left untouched, xxiv; easy to have increased 'Works,' xxiv; a hitherto unprinted letter from Harvey to Cecil, from Hatfield MSS., xxv-viii; curious contemporary notice of the Harvey-Nashe quarrel, xxviii-ix; contemporary MS. now first printed, entitled "The Triming of Tom Nashe," xxix-xxxiii; Dekker's judgment on Nashe *versus* Harvey, xxxiii; Dr. Brinsley Nicholson's helpfulness, xxxiv. A. B. G.

END OF VOL. III.

FINIS.

REESE LIBRARY OF THE UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA

PR 2227
A2 G7
1884
v. 3

BOOK IS DU
MP

U. C. BERKELEY LIBRARIES
C055153037